Upside Down in the Clouds
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

My first objective is to honor Jesus, my Savior. He took the punishment for all my sins when he died on the cross. He made my new birth possible. Without Jesus and the Bible, my life would have been a disgrace.

My thanks to my many friends who have helped make this book possible. First to my wife, Edna, who for many years has given me encouragement and support. Then to my son, Randall and my best friend Ken Scholle who read the manuscript and gave me much editorial help. Also I want to thank Lindsey Garmon who taught me so much about the Bible. My thanks to David Smith who took the airplane pictures for the book.
OVERVIEW

Ted Flynn is a commercial pilot who is in search for real truth in science, politics and religion. He suffers incredible trials and tests of his faith and comes out victorious.

He is enrolled in the University of Kentucky at Lexington where he receives a degree in journalism.

Though this book is a novel, it contains valuable scientific information upholding faith in God and the trust worthiness of the Bible.
A NOVEL

BY

Leroy Walters

Leroy Walters
4125 Schumacher Road
St. Louis, Missouri  63049
636-343-9355
E-mail:  Leroywalters@sbcglobal.net

All Scriptures are quoted from the 1984 edition of the NIV unless otherwise noted.
CHAPTER 1

It was after 9:00 P.M. on a dark, overcast, September night when Ted Flynn left his home airport, Spirit of St. Louis, for St. Louis International Airport, about fifteen miles away. On a clear day, this would have been about a five-minute flight, but on this night, because of very low visibility, low clouds, and radar vectoring, it took much longer. Ted had to fly what is called an instrument approach. As the pilot flies blindly through the clouds, the people in the radar room watch the plane’s blip giving him directions and altitudes to sequence him to the airport amidst many other planes. Ted, who was piloting a twin engine Piper airplane, was on his way to pick up cargo from St. Louis which was destined for Little Rock, Arkansas. He was alone with no co-pilot, and the cloud ceiling was 300 feet, which meant that thick dark clouds reached to within 300 feet of the surface. Another way of putting it, Ted would not see the earth underneath him or the airport until he was less than 300 feet above the ground.

Ted was 2,000 feet above the ground in zero visibility on his instrument approach when the airplane suddenly went out of control. Ted pushed and pulled, worked the pedals, twisted the yoke, tried what is called unusual attitude recovery, (“attitude”—the pitch and bank of the airplane with reference to the horizon,) but nothing worked. The aircraft was totally out of control!
Some people are born to fly and Ted was one of them. From his earliest childhood memories he loved toy airplanes. Ted had soloed a single engine airplane on his 16th birthday and obtained his Private Pilot license one week after he turned 17. His father purchased a single engine airplane and Ted, driven by his passion and love of flying, met the requirements for his commercial pilot license and his flight instructor certificate by the time he was 19.

Meanwhile, Ted entered a partnership with another person and bought a twin engine airplane. Soon thereafter he passed tests to be a multiengine pilot and a multiengine flight instructor.

After this he obtained a job with a company at Spirit of St. Louis to do flight instruction and charter flying, both cargo and passengers. It was while Ted was on a cargo flight on that September night, he lost control of his airplane while doing an instrument approach to St. Louis International Airport. He looked at the attitude indicator and it looked like he needed to pitch down. He did, but the airplane instrument showed that he pitched up even more. It looked like he needed to roll left, but as he moved the controls to roll left the indicator showed him rolling right even more!

To avoid collision with other aircraft, pilots are expected to fly an exact course when flying by instruments in the clouds into very busy airports like St. Louis International. Ted hesitated to confess his situation to the control tower, but then considered the fact that they already knew.
To fly into St. Louis International, the law required that the aircraft be equipped with a transponder, which enabled the folks in the tower to read the position and the altitude of the airplanes on their scope. He called the control tower and told them of his situation.

“St. Louis Tower, 6789Y, I've lost control of my airplane.”

“6789Y, This is the tower, understand you’ve lost control of your airplane.”

“89Y, Affirmative.”

The men in the control tower said later that they expected to find crumpled aluminum and fire at a crash site. At that moment, death certainly seemed possible, but Ted never thought about it at the time, nor was he in any kind of panic. He was too busy trying to figure out why the controls did not give him the response he expected to ponder anything more profound.

Ted’s airplane was rapidly losing altitude when it broke through the cloud layer into clear air with a clear view of the earth just below. The airplane was in a very steep bank with the nose pitched down toward the earth about 300 feet above a farm field. Once he saw the horizon, he quickly regained control of the aircraft with barely enough altitude to recover to normal flight. He saw Runway 12R at St. Louis straight ahead and called the tower.

“Tower, 89Y, I've regained control of the airplane and I see Runway 12 Right straight ahead. Am I cleared to land?”
“89Y you are cleared to land on 12R.”

Ted continued his approach for a safe landing on 12R. He THEN taxied off the runway and called ground control and obtained a clearance to taxi to the ramp where he loaded his cargo for Little Rock. Ted fully expected the authorities to come over and stop his flight until an inquiry had been made. He wondered if his license to fly would be suspended, but no one said a word and no one came over so, after loading the cargo, he then took off for Little Rock. This incident had shaken him and caused him to doubt his own ability to fly in instrument conditions and this night was a thorough test of his ability. Fog and low clouds made his flight that night barely legal. When Ted arrived at Little Rock, runway visibility was just one-half mile. He landed safely and unloaded his cargo. Before he could take off again, visibility dropped to zero, therefore he had to spend the night in Little Rock. He flew back to Spirit Airport the next day in good weather.

The next morning, Ted talked about the incident with Mike, a fellow flight instructor.

“Mike, I lost control of my airplane last night on an approach to St. Louis.”

“That's what happened to young John Kennedy, Jr. In 1999 he and all his passengers died off the coast of Martha’s Vineyard.”

“My situation was different from his. He inadvertently entered a spin. I know that because he hit the water so hard that the wheels were
torn off the plane. In a power on spin, the vertical speed can reach 10,000 feet a minute. Hitting the water at that speed would be like diving into concrete. I know what a spin feels like and, even though the federal regulations do not require it for any rating except flight instructor, I spin all my students before I solo them. I doubt that young John had been given spin training because if he had, he’d still be alive along with his passengers.”

Later that morning, Earl, his boss, asked Ted about the incident.

“Ted, I received a report from the FAA about your flight last night. What happened?”

Ted replied, “I was flying along on an IFR approach to St. Louis International when all of a sudden I lost control of the airplane. I have trained many student pilots to recover the planes from unusual attitudes, so I thought this will be easy. I will look at the attitude indicator and make an unusual attitude recovery. It didn’t work so then I called the tower and confessed my predicament.”

“Did you hit wake turbulence from some large aircraft? You know that those tornado-like winds off the wing tips of heavy landing aircraft can roll a smaller aircraft in a split second. In fact, several weeks ago a Lear Jet was caught in the wake turbulence of a Boeing 767 while on approach to Mexico City and crashed killing nine people.”

“That's possible, I suppose.”

“Were there heavy jets landing at the time?”
“I don’t know.”

“If the airplane was upside down, that would explain why unusual attitude recovery techniques would not work for you. The controls would have worked the opposite of what you would expect. You know what I mean—up is down and left is right.”

“It would also explain why I was able to recover once I came out of the clouds.”

“You are probably right.”

(Note for non-pilots: In normal flight, with the wheels on the bottom side facing the earth below instead of facing the stars above, pulling back on the yoke causes the pitch, or nose, of the airplane, to rise with respect to the horizon and pushing forward causes the nose to pitch down toward the earth below, while a left twist of the yoke causes the airplane to bank left and a right twist causes a right bank. Obviously, when the airplane is upside down, every control works the opposite way from what was just described—pull back on the yoke and the airplane dives, twist the yoke right and the airplane banks left etc.)

Ted continued, “I assumed that my airplane was still right side up. Now I think that was a false assumption. Had I known the truth about my upside down situation, I would have recovered the airplane to normal flight with no difficulty as I did once I saw the horizon underneath the heavy clouds.”
“The FAA has requested another check ride with you on Thursday. We’ll give you an hour of re-training prior to that check ride.”

Ted taught aerobatics and had flown single engine airplanes in inverted flight in clear air with good visibility, but to be upside-down in a twin engine airplane with zero visibility and alone at night was a different matter, especially when he was under the false assumption that he was right side up.

Ted couldn’t get the upside down experience out of his head. He kept going over it in his mind. Because of his false assumption, Ted almost died that night. His competence and highly developed skill as a pilot were rendered useless when he made a false assumption—that he was still right side up. If the clouds had been a little closer to the ground, he would have died in a mass of crumpled aluminum and a fire! If the airport had been using the west runway, 30L, that night instead of the east, 12R, the approach would have been over the tall buildings of the city of St. Louis. If he had approached the airport from that direction and this happened, they would have hauled his charred remains away in a basket.

Ted realized how close to death he came and began to think about God. Did God save his life that night? Did God have some greater purpose for his life? He said a prayer of thanksgiving to God.

The company sent him up with one of their instructors for an hour of training in preparation for the re-test and the following day the FAA
inspector came out and conducted the test flight. Ted passed and resumed his duties as a charter pilot.

CHAPTER 2  SPIRITUAL THINKING

Although Ted was not thinking about death, hell and Heaven at the moment of his crisis in the clouds, reflecting on his near death situation later, caused his mind to turn to thoughts of what happens after death. What if he had died that night? Where would he be? Then he remembered an event from his childhood. His parents had taken him to a little country church in the hills of eastern Kentucky while he was a small boy. The little church had what was called a “Revival Meeting.” During this meeting the preacher delivered an emotional sermon with a very vivid description of hell and then offered an “altar call.” A seventeen year old neighbor girl, Alice Bellos, came forward to be saved. The people in this church believed that the way to be saved was to “pray through,” until one got a special feeling that he or she was saved. A few people, at the preacher’s request, came up and kneeled on the floor around this girl and prayed for God to save her. As they prayed they frequently stopped and asked her if she felt saved yet. She answered that she did not. More and more people came up and knelt around her until almost everyone in the church was kneeling in a circle around her praying. Ted was probably six or seven years old at the time and as he sat near the rear of this little one room, rectangular, white church building with a stove in the middle of the room and
watched fifty or sixty people all on their knees encircling this poor seeker who herself was on her knees crying and praying. This kept up for a very long time without the girl getting the “feeling” of being saved. Sadly, after a very long time in prayer, the preacher told the girl that God was unwilling to save her and he sent her home “unsaved!” As Ted reflected back on this memory, he wondered if this was the correct way to be saved, or a false assumption, as he made by thinking that he was right side up when he was actually upside down in the clouds a few days before. Was God really unwilling to save some people or was this “praying through” a false assumption? Ted knew the preacher and respected him. He was a friend of the family and was sometimes a dinner guest at his parent’s home. If the “praying through” was a false assumption he felt sure that this preacher was unaware of it. But then, sadly, the holders of these assumptions are often unaware of the real truth as Ted was unaware that he was upside down in his plane until later. The deceivers are themselves deceived.

With these thoughts and questions in the back of his mind, Ted continued to read the New Testament. The Gideons had given his dad a little New Testament with Psalms while he was a freshman in high school and his dad gave it to Ted. As Ted thought about Alice Bellos, he happened to be reading in II Peter and ran across this verse:

*The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.*
Ted thought to himself, if I understand this verse correctly, God does not want anyone to perish. Then, if God really wanted to save Alice, and Alice wanted to be saved, then why was she not saved? Ted had been told that the Bible was the source of all truth so he made a mental note to read the Bible and check out what, if anything, the Bible had to say about the getting saved. Up to this point in his life, Ted had never made any serious attempt to study the Bible. He had read many of the Psalms. He liked them because many of them were short and comforting and he would read them before he went to bed at night.

Ted’s Dad, Ed Flynn, was born in 1955. As a child, he had a swelling in his tonsils. He went to a doctor in Chicago who recommended bombarding him with large doses of x-rays. The parents allowed the treatment and it temporarily solved their problem. The swelling in the child’s tonsils went down and the parents were happy, temporarily. On Ed Flynn’s thirtieth birthday, the doctors diagnosed him with thyroid cancer. What was not known in the 1920s through the 1950s was that a high percentage of these children who were given this radiation treatment developed cancer twenty or thirty years later. Ted loved his father and empathized with him over his suffering. Because doctors made this mistake with his father, Ted developed a healthy skepticism over what experts claimed to know and sometimes didn’t.

Ted learned that the same mistake is being made today by frequent use of CT scans. One CT scan is equal to 300 to 400 chest x-rays! Ted’s
dentist wanted to x-ray his teeth on every six month check up. The teeth are not that far from the thyroid. Ted’s Mom frequently went to chiropractors and every time she went to a new one, he claimed that he had to x-ray her spine before he could work on her.

Ted began to wonder about experts in religion. Could men and women who devote their lives to religion not make mistakes about what God desires the same as doctors who made mistakes about x-rays giving his Dad cancer?

CHAPTER 3

SATAN HAD CALLED AN EMERGENCY MEETING OF HIS DEMONIC RULERS

INTHE ROMAN SEWERS, 98 A.D.

Almost 2,000 years before Ted’s time on earth, Satan was active sowing false doctrine that would have repercussions in Ted’s life.

Satan was shocked at what he witnessed on the first Pentecost after the resurrection of Jesus. He watched as God’s Apostles planted the church in Jerusalem and watched it spread through Judea, Samaria, and to the whole earth. Alarmed, Satan called for a convention of his Arch-Demons to meet in the sewers of Rome, figuring they would be hassled less by angels in this location. Besides, to demons, the smell in the sewer was like good perfume to humans. The demons arrived with their flowing robes, multiple titles and high head dress. Satan delivered the opening address:
“Evil demons of this dark world, welcome to the world convention called by me to combat the greatest threat ever in our history. In case you haven’t been keeping up with events, here is a short review. On the first Pentecost after his resurrection, Jesus started his church in Jerusalem, and Peter his apostle, whom we thought we’d rendered harmless, (through his three denials of his Lord), gave the opening address in which he set forth the way for humans to be saved and admitted to that church. Worse, three thousand obeyed and were saved on that first day. Shortly thereafter, the number had grown to 5,000 then it grew to multitudes. Thinking we were wise, we launched a great persecution against the Jerusalem church, putting Christians in prison and killing Stephen, one of their young preachers. We even influenced Herod to kill James, one of the Twelve Apostles. Unfortunately, there were Jews in Jerusalem on that Pentecost from every nation on earth and when we reacted with a great persecution of these early disciples, we reaped unexpected consequences. They went back to their home nations and started churches all over the world. What started out for us as a problem in one tiny nation now had spread world-wide! We lost many in that generation because God outsmarted us. We underestimated God. Our purpose here today is to set long term goals to defeat this scourge
from infecting future generations. You are the elite, the rulers of
demons because you were more evil and clever than your brother
demons. Now, live up to that glorious evil reputation by setting forth
workable plans for the future defeat of the gospel of Jesus Christ.
Remember, Jesus himself said that his followers would know the truth
and the truth would set them free. Your goal is to devise many ways to
attack this truth, pervert this truth, confuse the minds of men and
hinder them from knowing this truth which makes them free of their sins
and my control.

One more thing, the church now uses the Scriptures as the sole
source of all truth. If we are to succeed in perverting the truth, we need
to substitute something else to serve as the authority in religion.
Remember, my evil demons, we are in it for the long haul. Be patient and
allow these changes to come in very gradually so that we meet less
opposition. No one goes from dedicated saint one day to absolute evil
the next. We must be patient. Allow them to ooze gradually and slightly
and in minor ways to compromise their convictions and values.”

This demonic meeting lasted six hours during which there was
much arguing, dissention, slandering and fighting among the demons.
Satan was thoroughly pleased. He dismissed the demons and they flew off to their assigned churches.

There were many demon meetings over the next several centuries and Satan had great success. He used the method of **boring from within**, that is, he got evil people within the church in high positions with much power and used them to erode the true teachings of Jesus Christ. All went well from Satan viewpoint until the invention of the printing press. That’s why he called another meeting of all his Arch-Demons.

**CHAPTER 4**

**ANOTHER DEMONIC MEETING IN THE ROMAN SEWERS**

**1809 A.D.**

**THE MEETING STARTED ON THE SIXTH DAY, A FRIDAY.**

(Some people mistakenly think that the letters “AD” stand for “after death” of Christ. They do not. A.D. stands for the Latin words, *anno Domini*, which means in the year of our Lord or the year Jesus was born, hence, according to our calendar, Jesus was born 1809 years before this world demon convention. Satan does not like the calendar being based on the birth of Jesus; he prefers the designation C.E. or Common Era and B.C.E. before the Common Era for the time before Jesus’ birth. The atheist of the French Revolution concocted a non-Christian “scientific” calendar. They changed the beginning of their calendar from
the birth of Jesus to the birth of the French Republic. France became a republic when they killed their king. The Christian calendar made the week with seven days honoring God who created the heavens and the earth in six days and rested on the seventh day. The French changed that to a week of ten days and every tenth day would replace Sunday. They started the year at the September equinox instead of January 1 when the days and nights were equal in length symbolizing equality among men. They named the day of rest which replaced Sundays (each tenth day) for tools and the months were named for seasons like heat, snow etc. They also changed the days into ten equal hours. Their hour would equal 144 minutes of our hour. They also manufactured clocks to keep time with this new system. In 1805, after this system was tried for about 12 years, Napoleon scrapped the whole thing and went back to the conventional Christian calendar. (As this is being written, one public school in the U.S. just omitted the words, “IN THE YEAR OF OUR LORD,” from their diplomas.)

Satan addressed the convention: “My faithful followers you have done very well for the past several centuries. The church has been thoroughly corrupted and true men of God have been burned at stake. Up until relatively recently we have succeeded in keeping the Bible in Latin and away from most people. We have made it illegal to translate the Bible into the languages of the people. Until the invention of the printing
press, the Bible was all but unknown. Now, unfortunately, it is being translated and printed in many languages—German, English, Spanish, French, etc. We can no longer bask in past victories. This new threat has emerged. More and more people have Bibles and are reading them. Like Josiah, the ancient king of Judah, people are reading the Scriptures and restoring true religion. There are many who are throwing away their men-made creeds, which we worked so hard in producing, and are returning to the Bible as the source of truth. We must do all that is in our power to stop this.

You will be divided into six committees each of which will deliberate and come up with plans to present to the whole convention six days from now. “

Satan then had them count off one through six. All the ones made one committee, the two’s another, and so on until the six committees were assigned. He secretly placed a spy in each committee to keep himself informed about what was going in each committee. Satan knew he could not trust demons. He instructed these spies to look for and report to him any signs of softness, especially on the part of the chair-demons in each committee.

Six days later the six committees gathered in the main Roman sewer to report. A terrific fight broke out among the committee chair-
demons, each wanting to go first. Satan, instead of stopping it, enjoyed it, urging them on. “May the strongest win,” he said.

After six hours of fighting, Pornapolis emerged as the strongest and most evil so he was appointed to present his report first.

THE SIX COMMITTEES TAKE THEIR SEATS AND PREPARE TO REPORT

Committee one, with chair-demon Pornapolis, (pronounced por. nap.’o. lis) began:

“Most Evil Leader and esteemed Lucifer and less evil fellow demons.” Loud boos echoed off the sewer walls. Pornapolis continued, “We’re reporting first because we are more evil and powerful than the rest of you.”

Satan interrupted as Pornapolis started slandering the other five chair-demons and ordered him to get on with his report to save time. Porno continued:

“My committee thinks sexual sin is the most powerful weapon we have against the purity of baby Christians. Look at what we achieved in the early first century church at Corinth. A Christian there actually took his father’s wife. Everyone who heard about this, Christian and non-Christian alike were appalled. Christianity got a bad reputation, thanks to me!”
Again, Satan interrupted: “I get your point, Porno, enough from you. Now shut up and let me hear from Committee number two:”

Porno continued despite his master’s attempt to shut him up:

“Your most evil crudeness, sir, my committee has one more major suggestion which will enhance our plans to destroy the church. Now that men have the printing press, other technologies will follow. God is already using the printing press to spread the Bible. We are behind in technology. We can use technology to expand evil...” Again Satan interrupted and asked two of the heavily armed guards to stick Porno’s head under the human sewage and hold him there until he stopped talking. While Porno was still submerged in sewage and could not hear, Satan said, “Porno’s last suggestion may have merit. Okay guards, you may now release him, but, if he continues to speak, put him back under. Now I will hear from committee number two and its most unwholesome leader, Greedicus.

Greedicus stood and began to speak using all kinds of ungodly flattery toward his leader, Satan. Satan was pleased and allowed Greedicus to continue the flattery.

“Most warped and sinful one, here is our report. All of you remember that it was I who took down one of the mightiest with greed, Judas Iscariot! He was one of the Twelve chosen by Jesus himself. I persuaded him to steal from the treasury during Jesus’ ministry on earth,
just a little at first, and then, more and more. At last, he betrayed his Lord for a paltry thirty pieces of silver. If I could seduce even an Apostle of Christ with greed, don’t you know that I hold the key to corrupting the church? Someone in my committee mentioned Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5). How do you think they were corrupted and brought into our ranks? It was I who seduced them through greed. Unfortunately, they were found out and eliminated by the Holy Spirit and Peter. Think about the weekly contribution collected in all God’s churches. Every week from every member, I and my demons are right there tempting them with greed to withhold part of their contribution. Even God recognized my power when he said in the Bible that the love of money is the root of all kinds of evil. I submit that all these other chair-demons should acknowledge that mine is more evil than all their evils combined.

At this last statement war broke out. Satan had to use his armed guards to restore order and this took some time. Finally the meeting continued with Satan actually commending them for their hate, jealously and contempt for each other.

My children, it is obvious that all of you have been drinking deeply from the cup of evil, but, we have a job to do. We must stop the growth
of the church. People all over the world are being saved and we are
losing them forever. We must get on with our work. I will now hear from
Empticus,” (his name from the Hebrew, nabal, empty person, translated
into English as fool. The fool or empty person says in his heart there is
no God.)

Empticus began with a long speech elaborating on Satan's most
wicked and evil attributes and bowed down before Satan when Satan
finally interrupted and said, “Empticus, you are right to worship me. I
love to be worshipped. I did my best to get Jesus to worship me and
offered him all the kingdoms of the world for a simple act of worship.
Pornapolis would have been given more time had he the wisdom you have
displayed. But, Empticus, get on with the report. While we wrangle here
more and more people are being born again and God is using the blood of
Jesus as an excuse to free them from the penalty of their sin. Our time is
very short. We must make haste.”

Emptyicus continued, “Greedicus bragged about taking down
Judas with his devices, but I was effective far earlier in human history. It
was I who took Eve down in the Garden. I am the father of unbelief. God
said eat the fruit and you will die. Then you, Satan, our disgraceful
leader, used my specialty, unbelief, to bring down the mother of all living.
You flatly said to Eve, “You will not die,” and she believed you, not God, and ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. We have had a heyday with all her descendants since. You can see clearly that we are far more effective than greed or sexual perversion.”

At these words, a ferocious fight broke out between the Empticus committee and the committees of Porno and Greedicus. This time Satan called in his guards and turned them loose on the members of the warring committees. Eventually order was restored and Satan continued:

“I’m usually a very patient dragon, but, enough of this. Go on, Empticus.” Empticus continued, “As I was saying, we were there first in the Garden. (Again murmuring and grumbling among the other demons but shouts of approval from Empticus’ own committee.) The key to stopping the gospel of Jesus and the story of the cross is unbelief. I submit that we promote a counter religion called atheism (from Greek, no God) which has been around a long time. If we can persuade people to believe that God does not exist, they will feel totally free to do whatever they want. There will be no basis for a moral code. They will feel free to ignore God and his commands. Everyone in this new religion will belong to us—soul, mind, and body.” (At these words from Empticus there was a standing ovation, not from his committee, but from the Darwinabus committee. Satan gave the Darwinians a sharp rebuke for this obvious
show of love which is the ugliest word imaginable for demons. It was so bad from the demonic standpoint that Satan would not allow that word in the demon dictionary. Order was restored and Empticus continued.)

“I can assure all of you that every member of my committee has nothing but extreme hate and contempt for Darwinabus and his whole committee. To continue, what could any of us hope for more than to persuade men to disobey all of God’s commands, not just his big ten?” At this point Empticus again bowed to Satan and took his seat while his committee cheered wildly for him.

Satan then came to the podium and said, “We will now hear from Darwinabus.”

Darwinabus came to the speaker’s stand, having learned from Empticus, kneeled before Satan and said, “I worship you O Lucifer. You have earned all rights to me and all of us and I lay my life down in praise to you, Satan, the mighty one.” Satan seem highly pleased with Darwinabus. Darwinabus got up and continued his speech, “The key to the future of evil is in mis-education of the young. Some parents we have lost. (There was loud murmuring and disagreement among the demons at this statement). If we win the next generation of the young, we will have them and all their children and their children’s children. We have a British baby born this year, 1809 C.E., (Demons were already using CE
instead of AD) named Charles Darwin. Fifty years from now, he will do more than any human in history to help us. (Darwinasbus had been successful in influencing the ancestors of the Darwin to adopt his sir name, Darwin.) Charles Darwin will introduce a theory which will replace belief in God as a creator of all human, animal, and plant life. He will call it evolution and he will persuade people that all life, human, plant, and animal, evolved from a single cell! (At this silly proposal all the demons in the assembly, except Darwinasbus’ own committee, were shouting cries of impossible, waste of time, no reasonable human will believe such a ridiculous theory. Some were sneering and hissing while others snickered. One demon from Empticus’ committee stood up and shouted, “Maybe, with some help from Empticus, this theory might have a chance.”

Darwinasbus continued, “By that time we should have many ministers in the church who will help us. They will develop a transitional theory that says, ‘yes evolution is how we came to be, but God used evolution to create us and that his hand was there guiding our development through millions of years until humans dropped out of the trees and lost their tails and began walking upright.” There was Mumbling among the demons some saying that it might work, but the majority agreed that humans were stupid but not that stupid. Satan, siding with Darwinasbus, interrupted and said, “I am here and now combining the
committees of Empticus and Darwinabus.” At that point a tremendous uproar broke out from both these committees about which chair-demon would be in charge. Satan continued, “Neither will be in charge. They will be co-chair-demons.” This did not help with unity. Satan threatened to bring in the extra guards and the demons settled down.

“We will now hear from Pridamus.”

Pridamus strutted to the speaker’s stand. He wore a red cap two feet tall and wore the most elaborate robe ever seen in demon assemblies. He had created an elaborate title which he insisted that all the demons use when addressing him and he resented that Satan ignored his title. His official title was: “The Most un-reverend Personification of Evil and Doctor of Unholiness, His Eminence, the One and Only Pridamus.” Insulted by his master’s failure to honor him, Pridamus went into his speech without acknowledging Satan. He did not kneel, he did not bow to Satan.

“I am the Most un-reverend Personification of Evil and Doctor of Unholiness, His Eminence, the One and Only Pridamus.” Satan was offended at this and ordered three guards to give Pridemus a beating that ruined his hat and dirtied his robes. Satan then said, “Pridemus, maybe that will teach you that I am the one to be exalted and worshipped here, not you.”
Pridamus continued, “Emptimus mentioned that his evilness went back to the Garden. Well, mine goes further back to you, our esteemed leader. It was pride that caused you, Satan, to fall.”

Satan was highly offended a second time and again and ordered his guards to dip Pridemus in the sewage and totally soil his bright colored robe and hat. Pridemus then continued a somewhat subdued demon, “My committee and I have concluded that the best and most powerful weapon we have to destroy the church is to do it from inside. We must create more hypocrites.” Some demon from another committee yelled out asking, “How do you do that?”

“*We pervert the system established by God to eliminate hypocrisy,*” he replied. “God has his disciples confessing sins to each other. Again, we do it slowly by degrees. At first we will have men confessing to one person secretly. Remember, in the Bible, God had them openly confessing their evil deeds, so this is a step in the right direction. Eventually we will have church members who hide their sins and never confess them to others. Yet, since it will become acceptable for church members in good standing to not confess their sins to each other, they will feel okay in spite of their hidden sins. They will ignore the Scripture which says, “confess your sins to each other and pray for each other (James 5:16),"
thus we trap them in disobedience to God from the outset. We know that all people sin, especially hypocritical church members. They will make themselves feel better by confessing their sins only to God, but, of course, God already knows their sins. A hypocrite is one who sins and hides it. Light is the enemy of hypocrisy. So we must persuade them through pride that their reputations and perhaps the church’s reputation will be destroyed if they confess their sins. Remember John the Baptist? He was having people confess their sins before he baptized them in the Jordan River. The Jewish religious leaders, because of their pride, refused to confess their sins and thus refused John’s baptism, so we know it works. From our frame of reference, what is better than a church filled with hypocrites?” Pridemus had instructed his committee to give him a standing ovation with howls of approval at the conclusion of his speech, which they did with gusto and howls of Great one. Satan, still smarting from Pridemus’ earlier insult and now feeling jealous of the praise given to Pridemus, ordered his guards to give him another severe beating.

Satan then ordered that the sixth chair-demon, Lieabulus (pronounced Lie.ab’.u.lus), to report. Having watched the demons who went before him. Lieabulus worshipped with all kinds of false praise saying from a keeling position, “Most worshipful Master, I think of you
constantly and spend hours in deep thought on how I can please you more.” Of course, all of this was a lie, but Satan bought it and was especially pleased. Lieabulus actually hated Satan and, if he thought he could get away with it, he would have rebelled against him. Lieabulus arose and addressed the assembly, “My name is (he pronounced his name by syllables) Lie ab’ u lus and you demons are fools if you believe these five liars who went before me.” Howls and boos went up through the assembly echoing off the walls surrounding the sewer. Satan almost had to call in the guards again before the uproar calmed down. Lieabulus continued, “If you demons have the intelligence of a grasshopper, you will recognize that our biggest enemy is truth. We must fill the earth with lies. Our leader has been called the Father of Lies. He lied to Eve and she believed him. We must learn from him.” For the first time in the whole assembly, Satan showed a very slight smile. “I ask you, how do people escape us in the first place? It is when they are, to use God’s words, born again. What we have to do is pervert the true teaching of God on how to be saved. Then, when we put forth a variety of pseudo salvation plans on how to be born again, people will follow them and think they are saved even though they still belong to us. We can make our plans for “salvation” more appealing than God’s plans, so that people will be drawn to our
pseudo new birth and not want to change even when faced with the truth.”

“As stated before, we already have a large number of our ministers in the churches thinking they are ministers of light. They will take our ideas and preach them as their own. The trick is to mix truth with false doctrine. Over time, we can lead them farther and farther from the truth until, finally, the truth will seem false to them. If, at first, you give them a doctrine that is 100% false, most will reject it. To be successful, some elements of each plan must be truth and some elements must be false. I suggest that we have a 60/40 split with 60% of our doctrine being true and 40% false. The false elements must be critical so that they nullify the new birth. I’ll not bore you with details of each false plan. I and my committee will work that out.”

“One more point. Many people will not have any desire to search for truth themselves. As one man said,

‘Human nature demands authority, rule and direction. By nature we are programmable and we are programmed beginning as infants and we, or most of us, never escape even to the grave. Most people live and die and never experience reality and truth. They never really escape from organized politics, organized religion and organized medicine.’* Bob Livingston

“If we focus on the leaders in politics and religion, the people will follow, asking no questions about truth.”
Satan made no secret of the fact that he thought Lieabulus’ gave the most powerful report of all. Satan then spoke:

“If Lieabulus is successful, millions will go through the pseudo new birth process and think that are saved while God thinks they are not. That way, we never lose them in the first place. They remain in my kingdom. God never gets them. That is what I want more than anything. Lieabulus, I’m holding you and your committee responsible, not only for creating these false new birth plans, but for selling them to the churches.”

“My children, all of you can learn from Lieabulus. Lieabulus’ plan has more potential that all the others combined, therefore, I am taking 120 demons from each of the five other committees and assigning them to Lieabulus. That will give him 600 additional demon leaders to assist him in this most important project.

When the demons saw the direction their leader was going and the possibilities for evil with Lieabulus, almost every demon in the assembly wanted to volunteer to join Lieabulus and his committee. Again Satan had to threaten the assembly with his guards. When he regained control, he said, “The work of the other five committee proposals is too important to ignore. I know that all of you want to be with Lieabulus. That is not
going to happen. Since gambling is our game, you five committee chairpersons will select 120 from each committee by lot and send them to Lieabulus. The rest of you will stay where you are. You are dismissed.”

The demons again assembled by committees and the chair-demons carried out their assigned duties. The 600 newly assigned demons joined Lieabulus and his committee. They then made their plans and flew off to their assigned churches.

CHAPTER 5

CONFUSION ABOUT HOW TO GET SAVED

Ted had a friend, Sam Jackson, who was a fellow flight instructor and was about Ted’s age. Sam was the office entertainer, making jokes and keeping everyone laughing. He was five foot two inches and weighed about 240 pounds. Many of the jokes were about his weight and Ted enjoyed being around him. He agreed to meet Sam early one morning for coffee.

“Ted, why don’t you come to church with me this Sunday?”
“I don’t know, Sam, why should I?”

“Well, for one thing, there are a lot of pretty girls there and the preacher, Reverend Baugh, is interesting. He tells a lot of jokes and keeps us laughing.”

“You have convinced me. Where is your church located?”

“Hey, why don’t I just drive by and pick you up on Sunday morning? I’ll be by around 9:00.”

“Okay.”

The following Sunday morning Sam was there promptly at 9:00 and the two of them rode to church together.

“Ted, are you a born again Christian?”

“Funny that you should ask, I had a recent experience that makes me wonder whether or not I have been born again? How does one get born again?”

“Just say this little prayer and ask Jesus into your heart?”

“Is that all there is to it?”

“I think so. At least that is all that I did.” Maybe we can ask Reverend Baugh about it after services are over.”

The two of them arrived a bit early and took seats near the back of the building. Ted thought the singing was nice and the sermon was sprinkled with humor. Following the service, Sam introduced Ted to Reverend Baugh.
Sam said, “Reverend Baugh, this is my friend Ted. He is a fellow flight instructor.”

The Revered said, “Happy to meet you Ted.”

“Likewise, Sir.”

Sam interjected, “Ted was asking me about the new birth. I suggested that he talk with you about it.”

Reverend Baugh answered, “Ted, why don’t we make an appointment, could you come to my office here in the building at 10 in the morning?

“My student pilots start training at 10 in the morning. I could come by earlier, say around 8. Would that work?”

“Sorry, my office hours start at 9:30. I have to get my beauty sleep, you know. But, hey, this is a simple question.”

At this the preacher pulled out of his wallet a slip of paper with the words of the Sinners’ Prayer written on it. He handed it to Ted and said,

“Ted, here is a copy of the Sinner’s Prayer. All you have to do is just say this prayer and, voila, you are born again, saved! We don’t need a meeting for something that simple, do we?”

“I suppose not.”

The paper given to Ted read as follows:

“Lord Jesus, I need you. Thank you for dying on the cross for my sins. I open the door of my life and receive you as my Savior and Lord. Thank you for forgiving my sins and giving me eternal life. Take control of the throne of my life. Make me the kind of person you want me to be.”
The two flight instructors left and drove home. On the way, as Sam was driving, Ted was reading the “Sinners Prayer” and thinking about it. Ted said, “I’m puzzled.”

Sam asked, “About what?”

“Churches don’t seem to agree on something as simple as the new birth. The church I attended as a kid taught that to get saved, one had to answer the altar call. Come to the front of the church, kneel and pray until they felt saved. Now, your preacher says nothing about the feeling of getting saved, instead, he hands me this slip of paper with the prayer written out. There are no Scriptures with it. I wonder where he got it.”

“It’s no big deal. Just do it and forget about it. If it bothers you later, pray the prayer again. I’ve prayed it four or five times. I do some terrible sins, feel guilty and think maybe my heart was not right the first time and I was not saved. So I just pray the Sinners Prayer again.”

“I think I’ll call your preacher and ask him where in the Bible he gets the sinners prayer.”

“Wow Ted, you must be from Missouri, the ‘Show Me’ state. Let me know what he tells you, okay.”

“Okay.”

The following Tuesday, between students, around 11 a.m., Ted called the Reverend Baugh. When the phone answered, Ted said,
“Hello, I’m Ted Flynn. I visited your church last Sunday and wanted to ask Reverend Baugh a question.”

Secretary answered, “Just a minute and I’ll put you through.”

Reverend Baugh came on the phone and said, “This is Reverend Baugh. How can I help you?”

“This is Ted Flynn. I met you last Sunday at church and asked you about the new birth. You gave me a copy of the Sinners Prayer. Where in the Bible could I read about this prayer?

R. Baugh: “Just a minute, Ted, and I’ll find it for you. I’ll be reading from John 1:11-13:

“Even in his own land and among his own people, the Jews, he was not accepted. Only a few welcome and receive him. But to all who received him, he gave the right to become children of God. (V.12) All they needed to do was to trust him to save them. All those who believe this are reborn! —Not a physical rebirth resulting from human passion or plan—but from the will of God.” (Reverend Baugh mentioned that his quote was from the 1960 Living Bible translation.)

Ted said, “Just a minute, let me read that in my Bible; Ted had a copy of the NIV Bible. He opened it and read the Scripture from the same place, John 1: 11-13:

He came to that which was his own, but his own did not receive him. (V.12) Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God— children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband’s will, but born of God.

Ted asked, “Would you read verse 12 again from your Bible?”

Reverend Baugh read verse 12 again from his Bible, “All they needed to do was to trust him to save them. All those who believe this are reborn!”
Ted: “Why do these Bibles differ so much on verse 12?”

“Ted, you ask too many questions. I have a Ph.D. in theology. You can take my word for it. If the Sinners Prayer I gave you Sunday was not the way to salvation, I would not have given it to you. Your questioning me about the Sinners Prayer would be like me trying to tell you how to fly your airplane when I have never in my life piloted a plane.”

Ted responded with disappointment, “Okay, thank you.” Ted continued to ask other questions for about ten minutes then ended the conversation.

After he hung up the phone, Ted was puzzled by what he had been told.

Ted remembered that his mother, who was a non-practicing Catholic, told him that she had a Catholic priest baptize him as an infant. Ted had previously called a local Catholic priest and asked him about how to be saved. The priest assured him that infant baptism was the way it was. Ted now had three totally different explanations about how to be saved. One, pray until you feel saved. Two, just say the Sinners Prayer and third, have a Catholic priest pour some water on your head and this constitutes the new birth spoken about in the Bible even if you are an infant.

Ted felt confused about the new birth. The Catholic Church said baptism (pouring water on an infant’s head) without faith because infants
can’t believe, and the other said faith without water baptism, Reverend Baugh’s church! Ted realized that these two churches could not be more contradictory toward each other about what constitutes the new birth—one saying water baptism without faith and the other saying faith without water baptism. They even contradicted each other about what constitutes baptism, one saying baptism is immersion (Reverend Baugh’s church) and the other saying baptism as pouring water on the infants’ head (Catholics). They even contradicted each other as to proper candidates for baptism—the Catholics saying infants and the other saying no to infants that one must be old enough to believe.

The next Sunday he decided to visit a different church to see what they taught about the new birth. He had seen a large church building about three miles from his home. They started, as many churches do, at ten o’clock. Ted was there early. This church had a Sunday school, so he went to one of the classes. The teacher was a fifty year old lawyer. He asked the class for questions. Ted was ready.

“Sir, I’ve been to three different churches and they teach three completely different and contradictory things about how to be born again. What does your church teach about that?”

The lawyer answered, “We teach that you have to be sincere. We believe that all sincere people will be saved whatever church they follow. Even sincere Muslims and Buddhists will be saved as long as they are sincere. Thank God for all the different kinds of churches and Mosques
so that everyone can go to the church or Mosque of his or her choice! So, to answer your question, all three of the churches you mentioned are right even though they differ in specific teaching. We don’t worry about doctrine. Just be sincere.

“One more question, do you teach that people need to born again?”

“No, some religions have no born again theology in their doctrine while others do, so it is optional.”

“Thank you.”

Ted said no more in the class. The lawyer went on urging people to get involved in a rally supporting same sex marriages.

Ted went home, had lunch and then opened his Bible. It had a concordance in the back, so he looked up “born again.” It led him to John chapter 3. He read the following verses:

John 3:3-7 *In reply Jesus declared, “I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.”

“How can a man be born when he is old?” Nicodemus asked. “Surely he cannot enter a second time into his mother’s womb to be born!”

Jesus answered, “I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit. You should not be surprised at my saying, ‘You must be born again.’

Ted read and re-read these verses. He observed that, contrary to the words of the lawyer, the new birth is not optional. Jesus said that one cannot see the Kingdom of God unless he is born again. Then he observed that, according to Jesus, one cannot enter the kingdom without being born of water and the Spirit.
Then Jesus said, “You should not be surprised at my saying, 'You must be born again.'

Ted observed that, contrary to the doctrine that the new birth is optional, Jesus used the word “must.” You **must** be born again! Ted pondered the contradiction between what the lawyer said and what Jesus said.

Ted remembered that his mother told him that she had him baptized as an infant and it worried him a bit that he could not read about infant baptism in the Bible. Ted had a Bible concordance so he decided to research it in the Bible. He found the word, “infant” used only one time in the New Testament and it had nothing to do with baptism, Hebrews 5:13. Ted then looked at the plural of the word, “infants” and found it five times in the New Testament yet none of them pertained to baptism. He then looked up “baby” and found it seven times in the New Testament, yet none of them pertained to baptism. Then he ran the plural and found it only three times, none of them pertaining to baptism. Then Ted ran the word “baptism” and found it twenty times, and “baptize” and found it twelve times, yet none of these upheld infant baptism. So, Ted tentatively concluded that, according to the Bible, babies were not proper candidates for water baptism. Ted realized that this put his own infant baptism into question.
CHAPTER 6—UNIVERSITY/FUNERAL

Ted remained puzzled about all the contradictory church teachings about how to be saved, but, he was so busy with college and flying that he put it on the back burner for the time being. The flying business was good and Ted accumulated around 3,000 hours of flying time. He had been flying for the St. Louis charter company for around a year and Ted hoped to get a job flying for the airlines, but realized that his chances were poor without a college degree so he enrolled in the University of Kentucky at Lexington. Ted was accepted at the University and moved into one of the University dorms. Meanwhile, he obtained a part time job at Blue Grass Airport as a flight instructor. Two weeks after Ted started working at Blue Grass, a Comair Jet crashed killing forty-nine people and severely wounding the first officer. The captain, Josh Jackson, was one of Ted’s best friends. Josh had been his flight instructor for four of his ratings. They had spent hours in the airplane together. Ted was best man at Josh’s wedding. The two were like brothers. Ted learned of the crash and Josh’s death from David a fellow flight instructor. The loss of his best friend was devastating. Seeing the shock and pain in Ted’s face, David asked, “Why are you so upset?

“Josh and I were best friends. He trained me for four of my pilot ratings. We spent many hours together in the airplanes. I was best man at his wedding. Josh and I worked for the same company in St. Louis. We took many charter flights together when two pilots were required.”
“Wow! I didn’t know, I’m sorry, can I help?”

“No, thanks, anyway, I have never known a more careful and safety conscious pilot. Josh did everything by the book. If he could mess up through carelessness, how can I be certain that I won’t eventually do the same kind of thing? David, tell me all you know about the crash.”

“According to what I heard, the two pilots arrived at the airport early the morning of the crash and received their information including the tail number of their assigned airplane. There were two Comair jets on the ramp. They boarded the wrong one and started the APU (auxiliary power unit). When the officials of the company noticed their mistake, they notified the pilots. The pilots then shut down the APU on the non-assigned airplane and boarded the assigned airplane.”

“It sounds like the day didn’t even start off well.”

“Right, anyway, they then boarded the correct airplane, started it up and moved it to the loading ramp. After the plane was loaded with passengers, they received instructions from the tower to taxi to Runway 22. As you know, Runway 22 is 7,000 feet long which is more than adequate for the Comair Jet. (Runway numbers stand for the degrees an aircraft is heading when aligned to land or take off on that runway with the third digit dropped. For example runway 22 stands for 220 degrees with the zero dropped.) The Captain did the taxing to the runway and then turned it over to the first officer to do the
takeoff. During the taxing, the crew was involved in chit chat having nothing to do with the flight. The first officer was telling the captain that he and his wife had purchased a new dog and that they had taken him to obedience school. As this was going on, both men were thinking about the dog story instead of safely getting the airplane onto the correct runway. The captain taxied the plane onto Runway 26 and turned the controls over to the first officer to do the takeoff. As you know, Ted, Runway 26 is only 3,500 feet, far too short for a loaded Comair Jet to safely takeoff."

“How could he do that? He had three compasses, one magnetic and two gyro, all reading 26, the number of the incorrect runway. Surely these compasses didn’t all malfunction simultaneously.”

“There was no indication that the compasses were malfunctioning. It appears to me that they were distracted or just careless. The co-pilot did make the observation that the runway lights were not on and it was dark outside at the time. The Captain said, ‘Yeah,’ but otherwise seemed to ignore the co-pilot’s remark.”

“Then they also missed those giant numbers, 26, painted on the end of the runway?”

“It appears they did. Since the Captain was taxing, perhaps the first officer relied too much on his captain to get him to the assigned runway and failed to look out and verify for himself.”
Ted was thinking this is like religion where people rely on their priest, preacher, rabbi, or imam to tell them what to believe instead of checking it out for themselves.

Ted then asked, “Could they have misunderstood the tower during the transmission of the message by radio?”

“No, because during the pre-start check list, the first officer read the assigned runway as 24 and the Captain corrected him that the runway was 22 and not 24 since there was no Runway 24 at Bluegrass Airport.”

Ted asked, “How many died because of their mistake?”

“Forty-nine people died that morning. The first officer was the only one to survive the crash.

Ted was captivated by his own thoughts concerning this accident. The fact that these professional pilots were good sincere men who truly thought they were on the correct runway did not keep the crash and deaths from happening. The lawyer's theory about sincerity alone being enough certainly didn’t apply in aviation. He began to ponder again the thought of how false assumptions might apply in other areas of life like religion, science, medicine and politics. In this instance here were two professional pilots who both, simultaneously, made a false assumption which led to untold destruction and misery to everyone on their airplane and to all the relatives and friends of those
who were killed. If professional pilots who were the experts on how to fly airplanes could and did make such an unfortunate false assumption, might not ministers, doctors and scientists also make grievous errors due to false assumptions and placing too much trust in authorities without verifying what is truth for themselves?

From WIKIPEDIA: BLUE GRASS AIRPORT IN LEXINGTON, KENTUCKY. THE COMAIR JET ATTEMPTED TAKEOFF ON THE SHORT RUNWAY (26) INSTEAD OF THE LONG ONE (22).
Ted found this accident interesting to himself as a pilot who often had the lives of other people in his hands. Could he not make an honest mistake while acting as pilot in command which could end his life and the lives of those flying with him? He would never make the mistake of taking off on the wrong runway as these pilots did, he thought, but, perhaps he might make a different kind of mistake with the same results. Every pilot has made mistakes. He remembered a fellow charter pilot flying a Beach single engine one day and then a Beach Baron the next day. The panels looked the same except the Beach manufacturer had swapped places with the flap handle and the gear handle. As he was landing the Beach Baron at St. Louis, he was given runway 24 and told to hold short of 30 Left. This meant he had to land and stop short of the crossing runway. The airplane could stop quicker if the pilot retracted the flaps which put more weight on the wheels and made the brakes work better. The pilot grabbed the gear handle thinking he had the flap handle and retracted the gear allowing the airplane to settle on the ground and the props struck the ground. That pilot's day was ruined along with the passengers he was supposed to pick up. Both engines had to be overhauled.

Since he and Josh Jackson had spent so much time in the flying business together, Ted planned to go to the captain’s funeral. Josh was a devoted Buddhist so Ted went to the library to research the Buddhist religion prior to the funeral. Ted wondered about different religions. If he had been born in Tibet or India might he have been a Buddhist or a Hindu? Or if he's been born
in Saudi Arabia would he have been a Muslim. These religions must have seemed right to these people just as Christianity seemed right to Ted. So, he decided to examine Buddhism from an objective standpoint.

Ted remembered attending Josh’s Buddhist wedding four years earlier. He remembered the wedding vows. Instead of responding individually to the vows, the couple said simultaneously, “We do.” Ted remembered the last vow which was printed on the card given out to the guests at the wedding, “

Do you pledge to continuously strive to remember your own Buddha nature, as well as the Buddha nature of all living beings? To maintain the awareness that all things are temporary, and to remain optimistic that you can achieve your greatest potential and lasting happiness.

“We do.”

Ted wondered what this “Buddha nature” of all living things was.

In his research he learned that Buddha lived about 2,500 years ago. He was a prince born of a royal family. His father sheltered him from the cruelties of the world. One day Buddha left the compound and went out into the world where he saw a helpless, frail man. On a second trip to the outside world he saw a depressed man suffering from an advanced disease. On a third trip he saw a family carrying their dead loved one to a cremation site. On the fourth trip he saw a religious beggar living the life of meditation. Buddha decided to leave his wife and son and follow the path of the religious beggar in order to find out how to end human suffering. According to the story, while sitting under a tree, Buddha learned that suffering stops when men lose all desire.
Ted arrived at the funeral two hours early and some friends of the family were already there. Ted walked over to a man who looked like he was from India and introduced himself as a friend of Josh Jackson.

“My name is Patel.”

“Are you from India?”

“Yes.”

“How long have you been living in the United States?”

“Eight years, and Ted, what do you do and how did you know my friend Josh?”

“I’m a pilot and Josh was my instructor for four of my ratings. I know that Josh was a Buddhist. What is your religion?”

“I’m an atheist, but I enjoy Buddhist philosophy.”

“Is Buddhist teaching not contrary to atheism?”

“Not at all, Buddhism does not teach anything about a god or gods.”

Ted moved on and met another person who looked like an Indian. He introduced himself and she said, “My name is Kamala.”

Where are you from?

“Tibet.”

“Wow! You are the first person I’ve ever met from Tibet. Are you also a Buddhist?”

“Yes I am.”
“I was researching Buddhism before coming to this funeral because Josh was a Buddhist, but I never got around to researching Buddhist funerals. What are Buddhist funerals like in Tibet.”

“Are you sure that you want to know?”

“Yes, of course, that is why I asked.”

Well, as you probably already know, we Buddhist believe that after we die, there is a transmigration period of forty nine days after which we are reborn into another body. The quicker the old body is returned to nature or the earth, the better. That is why my people either cremate the body or dismember it and feed it to the vultures. This is exactly what we did for each of my grandparents. Here, I have photographs of the vultures eating the corpses.”

Ted looked and it almost turned his stomach.

“My stars, Kamala, now that I’ve seen it, I am not certain that I want to know this!”

“I understand. It is your cultural bias. If you had grown up in my culture, you would not be horrified at all. It would have seemed normal and natural.”

“Thanks for sharing that, Kamala, I think you may be right. It is my cultural bias.”

Ted moved on having learned more than he wanted to know about Tibetan funerals. Steering clear of other foreign looking people, He met a
middle aged, overweight caucasian named Omar. After introducing himself, Ted asked if he was Buddhist.

“Yes I am. I converted to Buddhism several years ago.”

“Could I ask you a question about the doctrine of Buddhism?”

“Go ahead.”

“I read something about annatto. What is that?”

“The word means no soul. We Buddhists don’t believe in souls.”

“But, if you don’t believe in souls, what is it that gets reborn in another body?”

“When one gets enlightened as Buddha was, he ceases being reborn and enters a state where he exists and doesn’t exist at the same time.”

Ted did not understand this at all, so he asked about Buddhist monks.

“They live austere lives. They are not permitted to eat after noon any day and they have bowls and go around begging for their food. Unless they are ill, they are not permitted to eat meat.”

After the funeral Ted left and returned to Lexington. He decided to explore other religions. He was especially struck by Kamala’s comment that he, Ted, suffered from cultural bias.
Ted’s first class was U.S. history with Professor Orville Thompson. It was a windy fall day and Ted was searching his student map trying to find the location of the history class when he saw a young lady he’d met earlier in the cafeteria walking the same direction. “Do you know where Professor Thompson’s U.S. history class is held,” Ted asked. “Oh, do you have that class too? I’m going there now, just walk me. I came out a few days early to familiarize myself with the campus,” she said. Her name was Lisa Bergman. She was a freshman from Monticello, Kentucky. She had long red hair, hazel green eyes and beautiful lips with a friendly, warm smile that seemed to show a caring and compassionate person. Ted felt an immediate attraction to her.

They arrived at the classroom 10 minutes early and used that opportunity to become better acquainted. Ted shared with her his love of aviation. Lisa had a bad experience once in a commercial plane flying through bad weather and was terrified at the thought of ever flying again. The recent accident at Blue Grass Airport with the Comair Jet helped to reinforce her fears. Her favorite uncle was one of the people killed in that accident.

Dr. Thompson came in, opened his notes and began his lecture. “This course will survey U.S. history from the colonial days through the Civil War. The second semester will pick up at that point and continue to
the present. You can read your textbook for the major content and I will be free to plug in here and there as I see fit. I don’t see myself roped to the textbook as most of you did a survey American history course in eighth grade and again in high school. Today I want to talk about mistakes our forefathers unintentionally made and what we can learn from them in a practical way.”

“I want to talk about the doctors who killed the father of our nation, George Washington. Thirty hours prior to his death, the father of our country was in robust health with the likelihood that he would live for many more years. On December 12, 1799 Washington rode out on his horse to inspect his plantation. It was snowing with temperature around 30 degrees. That night he came down with a sore throat. He suffered through the night. The next morning he called for his veterinarian, Dr. Rawlins. He bled the President then Dr. Craikno, his personal physician, came in four hours later and bled him three more times. Three hours later Drs. Brown and Dick arrived. Dr. Brown wanted to bleed him again, but Dick objected. He wanted to perform a tracheotomy instead so the President could breathe. Dr. Dick was overruled and Washington was bled again. Here is a summary of how much blood these good doctors took from the President.

1. 12-14 ounces - Mr Albin Rawlins
2. 20 ounces - Dr James Craikno
3. 20 ounces - Dr James Craikno
4. 40 ounces - Dr James Craikno
5. **32 ounces** - Dr Brown

“This amounted to more than half of the blood in Washington's body removed in a very short time.”

Dr. Thompson continued his lecture: “Washington was killed by good intentioned doctors Rawlins, Craik, and Brown but, not by Dr. Elisha Dick. What practical application can we in the 21st century make from this information?”

One student raised her hand and said, “It shows that the minority can sometimes be right.” Ted raised his hand and the professor called on him. “When someone operates under false assumptions, he can do great harm regardless of his good intentions. These doctors, though well intentioned and sincere, actually murdered the President.” At that point another student, Bruce, spoke up and said, “How can we ever know for sure that we have the truth? Isn’t every doctor who practices medicine likely to unintentionally kill some of his patients even though he is practicing the best medicine available to him at that point in time? Isn’t this somewhat offset by the larger number of lives they save by the practice of medicine?” Lisa spoke up, “I've heard that hospitals kill more patients than disease. How did these doctors ever come up with the nutty theory that bleeding heals in the first place? Did someone just make an assumption and the others, because he was highly respected, just go with it without any scientific verification?”
No one seemed to be able to answer Lisa’s question. Professor Thompson said, “Phlebotomy was practiced in the United States until somewhere between 1875 and 1900. It is still practiced in places like India and is still used for a few diseases like polycythemia where the body produces too great a volume of blood. The entire circulatory system can become engorged with blood and the blood can become so thick that capillaries can become plugged and the flow of blood through the body becomes extremely sluggish. It might have done some good in cases of high blood pressure. Perhaps in cases like this, the physicians generalized that what is good for one is good for all.”

Another student, Ben, spoke up, “Dr. Thompson, might we not learn the importance of hearing from dissenters even when they are in the minority? Dr. Elisha Dick’s advice probably would have saved the President’s life had they listened to him.”

“Good point Ben. It is not unusual for the minority opinion turns out to be the correct one.”

The discussion went on for some time about what can we know for certain, the scientific method, double blind studies, some of Einstein’s theories and quantum mechanics, all of which intrigued Ted and raised his curiosity about the search for truth. Ted loved the class and made it his goal to make extra preparations for it.
Ted was drawn to Lisa and looked forward to the next class for two reasons. One, he liked the subject and the professor and, even more, Lisa Bergman was in his class. He'd have an opportunity to talk to her again and he planned to ask her if she was seeing anyone.

CHAPTER 8 -- DR. ALFONSO

Ted’s fifth class was biology with Dr. Thomas Alfonso. Dr. Alfonso had hardened his attitude toward religion and became bitter toward anything Christian after his daughter joined his ex-wife’s church. He and his wife had divorced when the daughter was eleven. Even though Dr. Alfonso gave it his best shot, he was not able to convince his own daughter to embrace atheism and evolution.

Fired up and excited about college and his good experience in his U.S. history class with Professor Thompson, Ted hurried to the biology classroom and took a seat on the front row. Professor Alfonso was about fifteen minutes late when he entered the room. The students were all engaged in conversations with each other when the professor dropped his book on his desk with a loud pop. The room became quiet and the doctor began to speak.

“Class, welcome to Introductory Biology. In this course you will learn how all life on earth, including you, evolved from a one cell organism over millions of years. There was plenty of time as the earth is 4.5 billion years old. You'll learn that all that Sunday school stuff about Adam and Eve and the creation story in Genesis are as credible as the
Flat Earth Society and that Elvis Presley is still alive. I am an atheist.
You’ll learn that the greatest man who ever lived was not Jesus Christ, but Charles Darwin. In the 150 years since he wrote his book, there has been no credible science to contradict him.

We hear about “Creation Science” and “Intelligent Design.” If any of you have been hoodwinked by this pseudo science, I am glad that you are here where your mind can be deprogrammed. If you are foolish enough to hold to this nonsense and brave enough to speak up you are welcome to bring forth your puny “science” so I can shine the light of truth on it and expose it for what it is. Anyone want to stand up and defend your creation myth?” Most of the class was in a state of shock. No one stood up.

Dr. Alfonso continued by quoting the famous evolutionists Richard Dawkins who said,

“It is absolutely safe to say that if you meet somebody who claims not to believe in evolution, that person is ignorant, stupid, or insane (or wicked, but I’d rather not consider that).”

“There,” said Dr. Alfonso, “you have it from one of the smartest men in the world and I agree with him. I don’t blame you for not speaking up. What do you know? How many degrees do you hold? I will complete my remarks today by quoting another source of great authority. In his recent book, *Darwin’s Dangerous Idea*, philosopher Daniel Dennett compares religious believers—90 percent of the
population—to wild animals who may have to be caged, and he says that parents should be prevented from misinforming their children about the truth of evolution, which is so evident to him. I’d like you to know that I agree with Daniel Dennett. Preventing parents from filling their children’s head with such rubbish as creation would make my job easier. I wouldn’t have to spend all that time erasing what they’ve done to their children.

No one was brave enough to speak. Many who had attended church and Sunday school back in their home towns had never heard such brashness. Dr. Alfonso had achieved his goal. Most were shocked and slipped down in their seats in retreat. Ted’s spiritual foundations were shaken. Could this professor be right? Is it possible that he, Ted, had been holding on to a false assumption about God and the Bible? After all Dr. Alfonso is a scientist and he is certainly bold and unequivocal. Could the Bible which he had been taught to hold in high reverence be just a fairy tale? Ted noted that Dr. Alfonso had opened the door for the other side to be heard, but Ted didn’t feel qualified to challenge him. After all Ted was merely a freshman in college and this professor was a scientist with a Ph.D. and many years of experience. Dr. Alfonso paused for a moment as he observed the silence and, feeling confident in his shocking presentation, he proceeded. “I see that there are no uninformed courageous takers at this point, so read the first chapter in your textbook for the next class.” With that Dr. Alfonso dismissed the
class early. Students left the class with heads bent slightly forward in silence, each pondering what the professor had just said.

The next day someone placed a note on Dr. Alfonso’s lectern with Psalms 14:1 “The fool says in his heart, "There is no God."... There was no signature. Dr. Alfonso came, in fifteen minutes late as his custom was, laid his brief case down, walked to the lectern and there was Psalm 14 staring up at him. He silently read it then his face turned beet red as he asked, “Who left this note for me?” No one said a word and he went on with his lecture. This note set him off. He became almost insane. He was not accustomed to opposition. First his daughter became a Christian, and now this note calling him a fool! His attacks and snide remarks belittling Christianity became more frequent. The only class member who knew what the note said was Samuel Hennessey who had put it on the lectern. Ted knew nothing about the note.

CHAPTER 9—FAITH TESTED--WEIGHING THE EVIDENCE

Ted pondered what all this meant. He came to his dorm that evening and talked with his roommate, Charles Norris, about what he heard from Dr. Alfonso. Charlie was a second year student from Knoxville, Tennessee. He had attended parochial schools from grade school through high school. “Charlie, if the Bible is really untrue and all life evolved over millions of years by the strong killing off the weak, what reason do I have to maintain Christian principles of
mortality? If we’re all just accidents of nature, the results of chemicals reacting with chemicals with no purpose, why should I follow a moral code? Why shouldn’t I have sex with girls and enjoy myself as other college students are doing? If there is no God, no heaven, then there is no eternal punishment for wrong doing?”

There were many very sexy, attractive and willing girls all over the campus and Ted knew that many of the boys in his dorm were taking advantage of that fact. He was still a virgin but the hormones were charging through his blood vessels and he thought often how much pleasure it might be to have sex with a beautiful girl.

Charlie replied thoughtfully, “Even if there is no God and I was convinced that we evolved through millions of years from a one celled animal, does not that lifestyle expose one to all kinds of diseases such as herpes, AIDS, and about 30 other major diseases which are spread sexually? I heard that a recent study completed at Washington State University showed that 32% of the female college students have HPV (human papilloma virus), one of the most contagious of all the venereal diseases. Here’s a quote from my health book, ‘Human papillomavirus (HPV) is the most prevalent sexually transmitted infection in the world, occurring at some point in up to 75% of sexually active women (Groopman 1999)’

I also heard that condoms offer little protection against HPV since any skin-to-skin contact can result in transmission of the virus. I read that HPV is
the only proven cause of cervical cancer, and is implicated in chronic urinary tract infections, vaginosis and vaginitis. I also read that virgins tested on campus do not have the HPV virus. The virus also causes cancer in men. Through oral sex, men are infected in their tonsils which can develop into throat cancer.”

“Charlie, why are you sharing this with me?”

“So that, hopefully, Ted, you won’t make the same mistakes that I made. Ted, please allow me to share with you something from my own shameful past. During and after high school, I had sex with many girls. Evidently, early in my sexual promiscuity I became infected with HIV which, as you know, causes AIDS. Also, as an added evil, I am infected with herpes and, as you know, there is no cure for either of these diseases. I had spread AIDS to many sexual partners before I realized that I was infected. One of my girl friends, Susan, became pregnant and gave birth to an infected son. She is now married to another man. My sexual future is doomed due to my own misconduct. There is nothing I can do to undo the damage I have caused. I’ve sentenced my own son to a life of misery. If you would like to have a family someday, I’d hate to think of the implications of you becoming infected with some disease like HPV. If then you then infect your future wife who because of the disease, develops cervical cancer and dies, how would you feel?”

“Thank you for sharing that with me. It gives me pause for thought.”
“Perhaps it is one way I can partially atone for my own sin. Ted, has anyone spelled out for you the benefits of monogamy? If two virgins marry and remain monogamous throughout life, these diseases cannot infect them with the possible rare exception of a blood transfusion. There is an added benefit of trust and love. Satan’s people are very successful in advertizing the delights of the one night stands. Movies, television drama, and books feature promiscuous sex and make it sound like fun, but they hide the consequences and over rate the benefits. God’s immutable law is that you reap what you sow. Christians should be more active in glorifying the safety and delight of two virgins marrying and remaining monogamous throughout their lifetime.

“Charlie, are you a Christian?”

“Yes I am, but these reasons apply and make sense Christian or non-Christian. Even if I became an atheist, I would still recommend that everyone should follow the monogamy plan. Besides, Ted, with all the concern over diseases, how can one develop real, caring, long lasting and loving relationships when he and every girl he has sex with is, has had and continues to have sex with anyone and everyone who pleases him or her at the moment?”

Ted, thinking about what he just heard, said, “I know what a fortunate child I am to be born to a loving mother and father who loved each other and provided me with a warm, nurturing and loving relationship. I look at the lives of many of my class mates in high school
who came from broken homes. Their lives were really messed up with sex, drugs, crime and everything imaginable. My parents seem even closer to each other now that all their children are grown and have left home. I could not imagine my father and mother divorcing each other."

Charlie’s warning about HIV and HPV stuck with Ted. If he had casual sex even once, he could become infected with one of these diseases and, if no symptoms appeared, as with the HPV virus in males, and he then married, he would, no doubt, infect his own wife.

CHAPTER 10

Now that Ted was living in Lexington, Kentucky, he had to find a new church. The following Sunday he visited a church led by Reverend Fred Clark. Ted liked what he heard in the sermon. The preacher seemed to back up every major point with Scripture. After services, he met the preacher and said, “Reverend Clark I have some questions about how to be saved. Could you and I meet some time to discuss this?”

Yes, Ted, I’d be delighted to meet with you. When would you like to meet?”

“I have a 10:00 o’clock student in the morning, but I guess anything earlier than that would be before your office hours.

“No, I’d get up any time to study the Bible with people. Is 6:00 A.M too early for you?”
“No, that would be excellent. Can I buy you breakfast?”

“Certainly, why don't we meet in that restaurant across the street?”

Ted agreed and at 5:50 the next morning when Ted was arrived, Fred Clark was already seated at a table waiting for him.

After some get acquainted small talk, Ted summarized what he had found from different churches about the new birth. He told Brother Clark about his encounter with Reverend Baugh.

“Brother Clark, I'm searching for the truth about how to be saved or born again. I met with Reverend Baugh and asked him this question and he gave me a copy of the Sinners Prayer. He then told me to just pray this prayer and that I would be saved. I later called him up and asked where in the Bible he found this prayer. He read to me from his Bible John 1:12,

All they needed to do was to trust him to save them. All who believe this are reborn.

“This does not read like my Bible. I have the NIV version. I'll give it to Reverend Baugh, though, at least he pointed to a Scripture for his doctrine. Brother Clark, is this the way to be saved?

“Ted, the verse you quoted is from the 1960 edition of the living Bible. Kenneth Taylor, the translator, simply made up this verse out of his imagination and blatantly inserted it into his Bible. There is no support for these words in the original Greek Bible. Kenneth Taylor directly contradicted the many warnings given by God in his Bible not to add to or to take from his word such as Deuteronomy 4:2
Do not add to what I command you and do not subtract from it, but keep the commands of the LORD your God that I give you.

“Do you mean that Kenneth Taylor took it upon himself to be God and wrote his own theology right into his Bible?”

“Exactly, they somewhat cleared up this mistake in the 1990's revision of the Living Bible after much damage had already been done. To answer your original question directly, no, that is not the way to be saved. It has no basis in the Bible. I suggest that you read Matthew 28:18-20 where Jesus gave what people call the Great Commission, the marching orders to his disciples to take the gospel to all nations and then read Acts chapter 2 where the very first people were saved under this commission.”

“I'm leaving tomorrow for a three week evangelistic campaign in Georgia. When I return, we will meet again.”

“Great, I can’t wait to talk with you again. Thanks Brother Clark.”

The two left the restaurant and Ted went to his car and began reading the assigned Scriptures.

Lisa was not in Ted’s biology class. The next day he arrived early to American history class hoping to spend some time with Lisa. Unfortunately, she arrived about one minute early, but long enough for Ted to ask her to have lunch with him. She agreed.

Dr. Thompson, who was always on time, again brought up the George Washington story and asked if students had more ideas about the topic. Ted brought up the Comair Jet crash. It came out during the
discussion that Ted was a commercial pilot and many in class including Dr. Thompson plied him with technical questions.

After class, Ted and Lisa went to the cafeteria and had lunch together. Ted shared with Lisa his experience in Dr. Alfonso’s biology class. She was shocked. They talked about that for a while. Lisa had a very strong faith and made it a point to read the Bible and pray every day.

“Are you seeing anyone?” Ted asked.

“Why do you ask?” said Lisa with a bit of a tease in her words.

“Oh, didn’t you know,” said Ted, carrying on the playful tone, “I’m doing a report on Lisa Bergman for my files.” She laughed and told him that she had a boyfriend back in Monticello, Kentucky, but they stopped dating a few weeks before she left for college. Ted asked her out for dinner the following Friday evening and she readily agreed. Ted was in love! Never in his life had he fallen so quickly and so deeply in love. He had trouble thinking about his flying profession or his classes. Lisa was on his mind almost every waking minute. He could hardly wait until Friday evening.

CHAPTERS 11—THE OTHER SIDE

Dr. Alfonso’s presentation had shaken Ted and caused him to reconsider everything he had believed. The Professor boasted of his Ph.D. and quoted others whose opinions agreed with his. He came with strong convictions, but, when it was boiled down, how much real science did he
use to back up his assertions? Perhaps he would be forthcoming with the science later in the course, Ted thought. He had certainly heard one side, but was there another side? Did all scientists agree with Alfonso or were there other scientists who believed in God and the Bible?

While Ted was pondering these things his roommate, Charles Norris, came in and asked him how his day was going.

Ted answered, “We talked about the Comair crash in American history and I had lunch with Lisa Bergman.”

“Wow! You are wasting no time in pursuing your new value system.”

“Wrong, Charlie, what you said yesterday about the virtues of monogamy as opposed to diseases really made sense to me. I don’t desire to be the campus playboy. I’ve fallen in love with Lisa and, if she and I get married, I could not imagine myself being unfaithful to her.”

“Sorry, I misjudged you. Hallelujah and congratulations! Does she love you?”

“It is too early to tell for sure, but maybe.”

“Ted, there is a meeting this Thursday evening at Community Church on the topic of creation vs. evolution. A number of scientists, many with Ph.D.s, speak there on the science that contradicts evolution and supports the Bible story of creation. Would you like to join us?”

“Yes, I didn’t know there was such a group. I’d like to hear what they have to say.”
“Fine, the meeting starts at 7:30 p.m. We’ll need to leave about 7:15.”

Meanwhile, Ted shared the information about the Thursday night meeting with Lisa and invited her to come with them. She quickly agreed, maybe more to be with Ted than actual interest in the subject.

The following Thursday at 7:30 P.M., Charles, Ted and Lisa Bergman were sitting on the second row of Community church as the meeting started. The guest speaker was David Burns, Ph.D. and professor of biology in one of the nation’s leading universities.

Dr. Burns began in a very strange way. He showed a large photograph of Mt. Rushmore and then began saying that this marvelous sculpture was the result of centuries of wear from wind and water erosion. “I know,” he said, “that you think that these four faces are the faces of four former Presidents, (Washington, Jefferson, Theodore Roosevelt and Lincoln), and that you think you can see design in them done by intelligence. You think some human sculptor did this work. I am here to inform you that it was all a result of blind chance and that intelligence had absolutely nothing to
do with it.” Then he paused. Ted was puzzled by Dr. Burns’ approach.

Then Dr. Burns continued, “You may argue that the resemblance to the physical likenesses of these four past Presidents’ faces is so striking that to argue the way I am arguing would be more than absurd, it would be insanity! These are more than just four faces. They bear the unquestioned resemblance to the likenesses of Presidents Washington, Jefferson, Theodore Roosevelt and Lincoln!”

(Then, abruptly, with no explanation, Dr. Burns hit the next slide on his projector and in the place of Mount Rushmore was a picture of the bacterial flagellum.)
“Have you studied the Bacterial Flagellum? On the backs of certain bacteria, one example being the e-coli is something equivalent to an outboard motor with a propeller, of course very tiny, in nano size. This motor has been described by a Ph.D. from Harvard as the most efficient motor in the universe. The bacteria is able to control this motor by running it forward or in reverse and to start and stop at will as it propels itself through its watery environment. The Internet Encyclopedia of Science says, “The rotor alone can operate at 6,000 to 17,000 rpm, but with the flagellar filament attached usually only reaches 200 to 1000 rpm.” Flagellar rotation can move bacteria through liquid media at speeds of up to 60 cell lengths per second.

Dr. Burns showed a slide of the bacterial flagellum rotating on screen and continued his lecture to the 50 or so people gathered at Community church. “How does this most efficient engine in the universe get its power? According to one Encyclopedia, ‘the engine is powered by proton motive, i.e., by the flow of protons (i.e., hydrogen ions) across the bacterial cell membrane due to a concentration gradient set up by the cell’s metabolism.’ Dr. Burns continued, “This little motor on this very small organism had no intelligent input in its design. It developed totally by blind chance. Though it looks like an intelligent designer planned it all out, nothing of the sort happened. It evolved very slowly
and very gradually from an assortment of proteins which happened to come
together in just the right way, and totally by accident, it developed a propeller
which it connected to a motor, figured a way to power this motor as described
above and then developed a control mechanism to start, stop, reverse or
forward the direction of the motor!” One more thing, in 20 minutes under the
right conditions, this amazing creature can reproduce itself. Instead of one
bacteria and its motor with all its countless complicated parts, now you have
two each with its own motor. Again Dr. Burns paused while the audience
reflected on what he had just said. Then he continued, “Which of my two
speeches is more absurd, the one describing the Mount Rushmore faces to be
the result of wind and water erosion, hence, blind chance or my second
description of the bacterial flagellum being the result of blind chance?”

Dr. Burns went on with his lecture, pointing to the drawing of the
bacteria flagellum (fig 3-3) he said, “Look at the drawing of the bacteria
flagellum; if just one part of this complicated motor and propeller is missing it
is inoperative. Just like the engine in your car, all the parts have to be there and
in proper working order for the engine to run and move the car. For example,
suppose that I just pull one end out of the distributor wire, the engine will not
run. Even though every one of the hundreds of other parts are in order and are
in operational condition, this one wire will cause the entire system which
propels the car to fail. So it is with the bacterial flagellum. All these many parts
have to be there and be in working order or this engine won’t assemble itself
i.e., make a new copy of itself by dividing, much less run. Our cars are made of
many separate parts which, when properly assembled, are able to carry you and others down the road, but the car, once it is manufactured, cannot build another car like itself. If well fed and held at the temperature of the human gut (37 °C), *E. coli* can synthesize and replicate everything it needs to make a new copy of itself in about 20 minutes, but, if only one part is missing, it won’t replicate. According to *Physics Today*, the E. coli grows by getting longer then divides thus making two copies of itself. How then can one explain the origin of this “most efficient engine in the universe” arising by the blind chance of chemicals reacting to each other? The individual parts would provide no benefit to the organism until all were fully developed, assembled and in working order. If you have a perfect engine but no propeller, there is no use for the engine, much less it’s many components. Or suppose you have the propeller but no engine to turn it. It would have no reason to exist! Darwin himself said,

‘If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down.’

Okay, Darwinists, explain to us how the bacterial flagellum was formed by “numerous, successive, slight modifications,” especially since it is obvious that no one of the parts can function in any way to propel this organism until the entire mechanism with all its numerous parts is fully assembled and functional! No one of the parts is useful in any way to the problem of movement until they all work together, each performing its unique role, therefore, there was no need for any one of the parts to survive until each was fitted into it’s role in making
the entire organism perform. Oh, by the way, Mount Rushmore is not the result of wind and water erosion and blind chance either. It was sculptured Between October 4, 1927 and October 31, 1941, by Gutzon Borglum and 400 workers and neither did the bacterial flagellum arrive by blind chance. Its designer and creator is the God of the Bible. It would be insane to argue that there is no design in this creature. In the same way, design is so outstandingly clear in creatures like the bacteria flagellum that to argue there is no design or designer would be contrary to common sense.

At that point Dr. Burns held up a book by Dr. Michael Behe called *Darwin’s Black Box*. “Dr. Behe describes biological processes and organisms which defy any logical explanation from evolutionary theory. As Behe put it:

“Design is evident when a number of separate, interacting components are ordered in such a way as to accomplish a function beyond the individual components. The greater the specificity of the interacting components required to produce the function, the greater is our confidence in the conclusion of design.”

The evolutionists have an “un-get-over-able problem” here. They have to explain how a motor evolved with nothing to power or how a propeller evolved with no power source or explain how they both evolved simultaneously. The motor would have no reason to exist without the propeller and the propeller would have no reason to exist without the motor to turn it. Oh, by the way, the motor would need a power source. Set aside all the problems of how a complicated motor assembled itself with on and off, forward and reverse control mechanisms, and a propeller shaped correctly with a connecting driveshaft,
how did all these separate parts come into existence and fully functional simultaneously?

Self replication requires an impressive amount of machinery which must all come together at the same time. The odds are astronomical for this to happen regardless of the age of the earth.

Ted knew about the E. coli bacteria because his Dad almost died from an E. coli infection, but no one had explained the marvels of this tiny creature with its incredible motor.

Then Dr. Burns told them about a statement which over 750 scientists from some of the most prestigious universities in the world had signed which stated,

“We are skeptical of claims for the ability of random mutation and natural selection to account for the complexity of life. Careful examination of the evidence for Darwinian theory should be encouraged.”

One of the signers, Dr. Rebecca Keller, biophysical chemistry, said,

“I found it important to sign this statement because I believe intellectual freedom fuels scientific discovery. If we, as scientists are not allowed to question, ponder, explore and critically evaluate all areas of science but forced to comply with current scientific orthodoxy then we are operating in a mode completely antithetical to the very nature of science.”

Dr. Burns then invited the audience to visit the web site and see the list for themselves:

http://www.dissentfromdarwin.org/
Dr. Burns continued his lecture and Ted sat there spellbound. This guy certainly gave a convincing argument for intelligent design, and that intelligent designer had to be God.

Dr. Burns continued to give another example of intelligent design which could not be explained by evolution—blood clotting. About nineteen things have to happen in sequence before human blood will clot. If even one is missing, we'd all bleed to death. No way can evolutionists say this took millions of years to evolve because all our ancestors would have bled to death waiting for these nineteen things to slowly evolve. Dr. Burns encouraged the audience to buy Dr. Behe's book and read this and other examples for themselves. Ted, Lisa and Charles spent much time afterward discussing this lecture. Ted was grateful to Charles for inviting them. He and Lisa planned to continue attending these meetings.

When he returned to his dorm, Ted looked up this site and read the names of the over 800 scientists who had signed this public statement disagreeing with Darwinian evolution. Then Ted called Carl over to look at the site with him. “Carl, I wondered if there were scientists who disagreed with Dr. Alfonso and, wow! Look at this list. They come from some of the most prestigious universities in the world. Here are just a few:

“Paul Ashby Ph.D. Chemistry Harvard University
Israel Hanukoglu Professor of Biochemistry and Molecular Biology Chairman The College of Judea and Samaria (Israel)
“You are right, Ted, they come from top universities like Harvard, Princeton, MIT, I’m impressed.”

“Don’t you think that Dr. Alfonso was dishonest to pretend that no credible scientist would disagree with him on the evolution question, or is it possible that he does not know about the scientists on the opposite side of the issue from him?”

“From what I know about you, I don’t think that you will let this go until you know.”

CHAPTER 12 HOW ONE LYING FLIGHT INSTRUMENT CAUSES CRASHES

The following Saturday Ted was assigned a charter flight from Lexington to Atlanta. Again, this was a single pilot operation. He was hauling electrical supplies to a company in Atlanta. On an instrument approach to Atlanta, in thick clouds with zero visibility, the gyro driving the attitude indicator of Ted’s plane malfunctioned. Ted, for a second time, was in danger of crashing and losing his life.

This instrument, the attitude indicator, (AI) gives the pilot both pitch and bank information so pilots tend to rely heavily on this single instrument for
flying in zero visibility. Pilots are trained to deal with this type of malfunction, but the way they are trained is often inadequate. Typically, the flight instructor, when training an instrument student pilot, takes a black rubber disc and covers the face of the AI on the instrument panel so that his student can no longer see the instrument. In flight training, there is no easy way to simulate this emergency with real aircraft other than covering the supposed malfunctioning instrument's face. Once it is covered, the pilot in training knows it is out and he looks to the other five principal instruments and gathers all the needed information to continue a safe flight. Unfortunately, in a real situation when this instrument malfunctions, the pilot is often unaware of the malfunction until it is too late. The reason is that the malfunctioning attitude indicator doesn't cover itself, as is done in training, when it breaks. It is visible to the pilot giving him false indications about the position of the aircraft with regard to the horizon. In other words, while feeding the unsuspecting pilot false information, the attitude indicator looks like it is still operating correctly. The instrument lies to the pilot and he has not been trained to ignore the lies. It looks like it is giving correct information, but it is lying and the pilot is following its lies to the crash site. The typical pilot has never, in his experience, had to deal with a lying instrument and cross check its information with the other instruments for corroboration. When the attitude indicator malfunctions in real weather conditions, the pilot is unable to handle it. The attitude indicator may be indicating a left bank when the pilot needs a right bank or it may indicate a pitch up when the pilot needs to pitch down. Pilots are seldom
taught to fly with an open lying attitude indicator which can be accomplished only with a flight simulator and not in a real airplane.

For example, on May 24, 1995 in Leeds Bradford Airport in England a twin turboprop took off at 4:47 p.m. with twelve people on board with a 400 foot ceiling. Two minutes later the crew reported problems with the attitude indicator, (AI). One report said that both attitude indicators failed—pilot and copilot sides. Five minutes later all twelve people on board were dead. These pilots had not been trained to fly with a malfunctioning open attitude indicator and they lost control of the airplane. How do we know this? The one real way this can be simulated is in a simulator and this company did not have a simulator. Here is the way the Brits described it:

"The aircraft went out of control whilst flying in turbulent instrument meteorological conditions and entered a spiral dive from which the pilot, who was likely to have become spatially disoriented, was unable to recover."

What had first alerted Ted to this kind of situation was when the governor of his home state of Missouri crashed about fifteen miles from his home in Jefferson County Missouri on October 16, 2000. The Cessna 310 which was being piloted by Governor Carnahan’s own son. The attitude indicator malfunctioned and the plane crashed killing Governor Carnahan, his son and the other person on board.

When Ted sensed something was wrong, he quickly cross checked all six of his instruments and discovered the attitude indicator was malfunctioning.
Ted now knew what the problem was, but, right there in front of him was the malfunctioning instrument constantly calling for a wrong action. Ted was fighting for control and about to lose it when he remembered his training. To simulate this, his flight instructor always covered the attitude indicator with a black rubber disc with a suction cup on one side. Ted had one of these in his flight bag. He took it out, covered the attitude indicator then gathered all the information he needed from the five remaining instruments, regained full control of the airplane and made a safe approach to Atlanta Hartsfield Airport. Once on the ground Ted had the malfunctioning instrument replaced and returned safely to Lexington.

Even when pilots know that the attitude indicator is malfunctioning, they are so accustomed to using it as the primary instrument that psychologically they have a very difficult time ignoring it. By covering the malfunctioning instrument, Ted was able to hide false the information and fly by the instruments which were giving correct information.

This fresh experience caused Ted to make spiritual application to his search for truth. There were preachers and priests proclaiming contradictory doctrines of salvation all claiming to be preaching the truth. The remedy in aviation was cross checking with other instruments. Why not cross check these ministers with the Bible and their lives to discover which ones were lying and which were telling the truth? A second lesson was not to rely on a single source or individual as many do. When questioned about spiritual truth the reply is too often, “we pay our priest or preacher to search that out for us so we do not
have to worry about it.” To Ted this sounded too much like the pilot who relied on a single instrument in the cockpit while it contradicted what five other independent instruments were telling him.

CHAPTER 13 CONFRONTATION

Ted purchased Dr. Behe’s book, *Darwin’s Black Box*, and read it cover-to-cover. He was fascinated by what he found there. He made notes on the book and waited for an opportunity to challenge Professor Alfonso. The professor continued to make sarcastic remarks about the ignorance of Christians who believed in creation. After three weeks of classes during which Dr. Alfonso continued to attack creation, he stopped in the midst of one of his tirades and asked for a show of hands of those who still believed in the Easter Bunny. No hands went up. He then asked how many believed that Adam had no mother. Ted and one female student named Sharon raised their hands. Samuel Hennessey was a believer, but lost his nerve and failed to stand up lest he draw attention to himself and be discovered as the writer of the note. (The one about Psalms 14:1 *The fool says in his heart, “There is no God.”*) Dr. Alfonso looked totally disgusted. He asked them to “share with us dummies what great scientific insight you have which led you to accept this fairy tale about Adam and Eve.” Ted offered the Mount Rushmore analogy. “Suppose,” he said, “Our civilization was wiped out by some disease and everyone who knew the history of Mt. Rushmore died. Then, a future generation arose on this great North American continent and found Mt. Rushmore. Suppose there were two opposing theories
about how it came to be. One side argued that it came about by blind chance due simply to wind and water erosion. The other side argues that they could see design in the faces and that they looked like four different individual human beings with faces not unlike people of their day. They decided to hold a public debate between scientists about the Mt. Rushmore’s origin. Suppose you were there for the great debate, Dr. Alfonso, and knew nothing about the real sculptor, Gutzon Borglum, and his 400 workers who completed this giant sculptor in 1941. Which side would you take?

Dr. Alfonso’s face turned fiery red and he shouted at Ted, “Young man, I can see that you are not cut out to be a scientist. Mt Rushmore has nothing to do with science. I asked for scientific insight. I refuse to stoop to answer such a ridiculous question!” At this Sharon shouted, “Answer the question.” Quickly most of the class joined in a chant, “Answer the question, Answer the question.” Dr. Alfonso grabbed his briefcase and, in a huff, stormed out of the classroom.

At this point Dr. Alfonso was fully convinced that Ted Flynn was the one who left the note on his desk and filled with hate, he was determined to get even.

After Dr. Alfonso left, the students in the class were dumbfounded. Sharon spoke up and said, “Ted, why don’t you tell us where you were going with the Mt. Rushmore analogy? Several other students chimed in saying, “yes, we’d like to hear it.” Ted replied, “Just as one can see design in the Mt. Rushmore sculptor, one can see design in created animals and plants which can
not be explained by blind chance.” Ted happened to have a large photograph of Mt. Rushmore in his book pack which he took out and passed around. He then gave the class the bacteria flagellum story with an outboard motor described by a Harvard professor as the most efficient motor in the universe with controls for stopping, starting and even reverse. And, as absurd as it would be to argue that Mt. Rushmore did not show design by intelligence, it would be even more absurd to argue that there was no design in this marvelous bacteria and especially its ability to divide and reproduce itself every twenty minutes! Ted had his copy of Dr. Behe’s book, *Darwin’s Black Box*, in his book pack, so he opened it and showed the class drawings of the bacterial flagellum. The students showed intense interest. Ted told them about the Thursday meetings at Community Church. The following week every member of Dr. Alfonso’s class was present except one, Demitri Hoppi. Ted had shared with the leader of this group what had happened and he called in one of the top Ph.D’s to lecture on the science supporting creation. Ted’s fellow classmates were more than impressed. This event was spread all over campus. Everyone was talking about it including students and professors. There was a division of opinion. Some defended Dr. Alfonso while others, including professors, even from the science department, were overjoyed to see Dr. Alfonso put in his place. They had heard of his arrogance for years and had wished to see him fired. This was unlikely because he had tenure. Like the University of Colorado professor, Dr. Ward Churchill, who called those killed in the Twin Towers on 9/11, “Little Eichmanns,” he was hated but seemed immune to any discipline from the
University. (The University of Colorado later fired Ward Churchill for plagiarism.)

As Samuel Hennessey left class the words of Jesus were ringing in his ears,

( Mark 8:38) *If anyone is ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when he comes in his Father’s glory with the holy angels.”*

Samuel regretted that he didn’t stand up for Jesus and said to himself that, if the opportunity presented itself again, he would stand up. Samuel remembered that the Apostle Peter denied three times that he knew Jesus the night Jesus was arrested. Peter was restored and preached the opening sermon on Pentecost, (Acts 2). Samuel thought that perhaps there would be grace for him too.

Meanwhile, Demitri shared with Dr. Alfonso what happened after he left and Ted’s invitation to the class to attend Community Church on Thursday. Dr. Alfonso was furious with Ted and Sharon and set his mind to seek revenge in his own sweet time. He ordered Demitri to stay away from the Thursday meeting at Community Church and he did. Demitri was one of those bootlicking kind who hoped to make up for his intellectual shortcomings by using his social skills with his professors.

That Friday was a holiday and then came the weekend, so some time passed before Dr. Alfonso’s class met again that Monday. The whole class was present and there was tenseness in the air as Dr. Alfonso, as his custom was, arrived almost fifteen minutes late. “Good morning class,” Dr. Alfonso said, “I
am running a science class and not a political rally. I will have no more outbursts like last Wednesday. If you do, I promise you, I will fail every one of you. As it is, I am in serious doubt that any of you, with one exception, is smart enough to make an A and, oh, by the way, I am such a fair and generous professor that I am giving you the final semester test question right now. It is a one question essay. You will have the remainder of the semester to prepare for it. Here it is: Prove scientifically that all life on earth evolved from a single organism slowly by slight gradual modifications. That’s it! There was absolute silence in the room. “This time I will insist that ‘Dr Ted Flynn,’ Oh excuse me, Dr. Flynn, where did you get your degree?” Dr. Alfonso continued without waiting for Ted to respond. “This time I will insist that Dr. Flynn back up his fairy tale beliefs with real science. Dr. Flynn, have you considered the fossil record which clearly proves evolution? Class, now let us give our attention to Dr. Flynn.”

Ted thought something like this might happen and his friends from Community Church had helped him prepare for it. “Thank you, Dr. Alfonso. I admire you for your openness to allow different points of view to be expressed in your class as you did Wednesday and again today. Only a man with a thorough knowledge of his field and confidence in himself would risk allowing opposite viewpoints to be heard. A sincere, ‘thank you,’ sir. I respect that.” Dr. Alfonso crossed his arms and Ted continued.

“Until I came to your class, I believed what the Bible said, that God created the earth and all the animals and plants in it. I admit that after your
first lecture my faith was shaken.” At this point Dr. Alfonso smiled--the first
smile of the day for him. Ted continued, “I have spent hours studying the issue
since then. It appears to me that there are two theories of how all life on earth
came to be. One that God created everything in one week and the other that life
evolved very, very slowly over millions of years from a one cell organism.
(Parenthetically, how did that cell come to be and where did it get its
membrane?) If theory A, i.e. creation, is correct we’d expect to find in the fossil
record an explosion of life all over the earth at once, on the other hand, if
theory B, i.e. evolution, is correct we’d expect to find life starting out in one
location on earth and then spreading very gradually over the earth as we see
gradual transitions in the fossil record from one species to another connecting
all life.”

“Dr. Alfonso, I've been told that life appears abruptly, in the fossil record,
with fully formed species all over the world at once. I'm told that this is known
today as the Cambrian Explosion. Darwin wrote about this in his *Origin of
Species*. I am quoting from page 164 of his book:

‘To the question why we do not find rich fossiliferous deposits belonging to
these assumed earliest periods prior to the Cambrian system, I can give no satisfactory
answer.’ Later he said concerning the same issue, ‘The case at present must remain
inexplicable; and may be truly urged as a valid argument against the views here
entertained.’

According to the information I found, most of earth’s animals appear
abruptly, fully formed, in the Cambrian period with no earlier transitional
kinds. The Precambrian rock is sedimentary rock sometimes as much as a mile
thick and yet, few fossils have been found in it. If this is true, it appears that the fossil record gives more support to creation than it does to evolution." With this Ted sat down. The class gave Ted a strong applause, all except Demitri.

Dr. Alfonso’s face turned fiery red again and he said to Ted, “Is that all the scientific proof you have Dr. Flynn?” Ted stood back up and said, “No sir,” I do have a question for you. Darwin said that for his theory to be true the fossil record should show innumerable transitional links between the species. He then said and I quote from page 152,

‘Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links? Geology assuredly does not reveal and such finely graduated organic chain; and this, perhaps, is the most obvious objection which can be urged against the theory. The explanation lies, I believe, in the extreme imperfection of the geological record.’"

Ted continued, “Dr. Alfonso, Darwin wrote this in 1859. There must have been many more fossils discovered in the 150 years since then. Have the gaps Darwin referenced here been filled in? If so, where could we go to read about that? Sir, I mean absolutely no disrespect; I am still studying this issue and will be grateful for all the help you can give me. If you could clear up this question and the sudden appearance of all kinds of advance life in the Cambrian period, I would be thankful.” Ted again sat down and again the class applauded, all except Demitri.

Dr. Alfonso's faced turned blood red again with rage. “Dr. Flynn,” he said with a condescending tone, “Can you find any real Ph.D. in the biological field who can back you up?” “Yes Sir,” Ted replied, “if you will permit me I have
made copies of a statement from Dr. Ray Bohlin, Ph.D. from the University of Texas in molecular biology which I'm willing to share with you and the class.”

“I will not allow you to distribute any of your fairy tale pseudo science in this classroom,” shouted Dr. Alfonso. He continued, “We’ve wasted enough time with Dr. Flynn. I will entertain no more questions on this topic. The science is in. Arguing this is equivalent to arguing for a flat earth.” With that, Dr. Alfonso assigned the next chapter in the biology text book and stormed out of the room. Most of the students came by to congratulate Ted and to ask for a copy of Dr. Bohlin’s statement on the Cambrian Explosion. Ted explained that Dr. Alfonso had forbidden distribution in the classroom so he announced that if they asked outside the classroom, he would gladly give each of them a copy. The class followed Ted out of the classroom where they received from Ted copies of Dr. Bohlin’s statement. To Ted’s surprise, Demitri also came by and asked for a copy. Demitri read it and took it to Dr. Alfonso. Here is a copy of that statement:

Dr. Ray Bohlin, Ph.D University of Texas, molecular biology "So, where is the documentation for the long history of the evolution of these creatures? The usual answer is that the necessary fossil layers prior to the Cambrian period have not been discovered yet. The fossils are just missing! Hmmm. . . . how convenient! This, after all, was Darwin's excuse and many evolutionists after him followed suit. Well, recent discoveries from Canada, Greenland, China, Siberia, and Namibia document quite clearly that this period of biological creativity occurred in a geological instant virtually all around the globe. So, the usual excuse no longer holds water. While evolutionists are not exactly joining a creationist wave of conversion, they are being forced to ask tough
questions concerning the nature of evolutionary change. Darwin did not envision major evolutionary change happening this fast. Darwinism has always been characterized by slow gradual change that is imperceptible in our time frame. Major evolutionary change was only visible as we looked to the fossils to reveal the number and type of intermediates between species and major groups. But the Cambrian explosion is anything but gradual, and identifiable intermediates are totally absent. Where are the ancestors? What conditions could have prompted this frenzy of creativity? Is there some form of unknowable evolutionary mechanism at work? I think you will find the evolutionary community's answers to be quite revealing. “This has always looked suspiciously like some form of creation event, and paleontologists frequently seemed rather embarrassed by the reality of the Cambrian Explosion.”

Ted met Lisa after class and discussed what happened with her.

“Lisa, how could a highly educated man like Dr. Alfonso be so blind with prejudice that he is unwilling to even consider scientific evidence contrary to his theory even for a moment?”

“Maybe he realizes that his case for evolution truly is weak and he does not want to risk exposure.

Dr. Alfonso asked me, “Can you find any real Ph.D. in the biological field who can back you up? I had a statement from a real Ph.D. with a degree in molecular biology and offered it to him and he would not even look at it.”

“He felt trapped. He reacted in anger which backs up my assessment that he sees weaknesses in his own position and does not want to be put on the spot and embarrassed in front of his whole class. He has gone out on a limb with dogmatic statements about how certain the science is for evolution is and how
absurd creation is and he is simply afraid to confront anyone with real science to back them up.

“Perhaps you are right. Do you have a few minutes?

“I have an hour before my next class.

“Let me share with you a story I read in an aviation magazine which may illustrate something about prejudice. Perhaps you can help me find something in this story to help with Dr. Alfonso’s prejudice.

“Go ahead.”

“I read this story in the May, 2001 issue of PLANE AND PILOT. Dr. Bob Achtel, a cardiologist and aero medical expert, tells this story about his wife and the use of oxygen. Dr. Bob loved to fly his turbocharged single engine airplane, a Mooney, to high altitudes at which he and his passengers needed oxygen.
His wife refused to use the oxygen and insisted that she didn’t need it. On these flights, as he ascended to higher altitudes, she would pass out and revive again when he descended to lower altitudes. She insisted that she never passed out, but that she was only resting. I'm sure that she sincerely believed this. Though the doctor gave it his best shot, she refused to be convinced.”

Lisa asked, “Why was it important for her to use oxygen? Perhaps she could use a little snooze.”

How important was it for Dr. Bob to convince his wife that she was wrong? Brain cells actually die as a result of oxygen deprivation! If this happens often enough the brain will become damaged to the point that the person will be permanently dulled like boxers. Look at what happened to Mohammed Ali who had been hit on the head too hard and too often.”

Ted continued, “According to experts, the brain is the first part of the body to reflect a diminished oxygen supply, and evidence of that is usually a loss of judgment. To further quote the experts, altitude chamber tests, in which high altitude flight conditions are duplicated, have shown that some people in an oxygen deficient environment actually experience a feeling of euphoria—a feeling of increased well-being. According to the FAA, these subjects can’t write their name intelligibly or even sort a deck of cards by suits; yet, they think they’re doing just fine! Such is the insidious nature of oxygen deprivation. It sneaks up on the unwary and steals the first line of sensory protection—the sense that something is wrong, dreadfully wrong!

“Wow! I didn’t realize how important it was to use oxygen.
“Yes, one day Dr. Bob climbed to one of those very high altitudes and, as usual, his wife passed out. (Remember, this is his wife, they are married and they are alone in a single engine airplane at a very high altitude.) The doctor then took off his wife’s blouse and her bra. Then he put her blouse back on her and put the bra on top of the blouse. Then he descended to a lower altitude and she woke up. The truth is that if Mrs. Achtel did not change her behavior of flying at very high altitudes without supplementary oxygen, it would destroy brain cells! She became a believer and used oxygen from that day forward!”

“You've convinced me. I'll use oxygen if you take me to high altitudes, but why don’t we breathe oxygen when we fly commercially? Those planes fly to very high altitudes like 30,000 to 35,000 feet and higher.”

“You don't need oxygen in a commercial plane because those planes are pressurized. When at altitudes of 35,000 feet the cabin's pressure may be only 7 or 8 thousand feet. If they suddenly lost pressure at high altitudes, the oxygen masks fall down and all passengers put them on. Going back to my story, Lisa, what do you think was the likelihood that Mrs. Achtel would discover this on her own?”

“Slim at best, I would think.”

“Someone who loved her had to find a way of breaking through her prejudice. She trusted her feelings instead of a very credible authority outside of herself. Do you see how prejudice can make a person blind to the real truth?”
“Yes I do. With Dr. Alfonse it seems to me that his pride is blinding him. He is a scientist and prides himself on how much he knows about his subject. Imagine how you would feel if you studied for years to get your PH.D., then a first year biology student embarrassed you in front of your students.”

“Lisa, would you pray for me that I might find some way to break through Dr. Alfonso’s pride?”

“Okay, Ted, but don’t hold your breath. This man may never be able to get over his prejudice.”

The next day Ted again went to Dr. Alfonso’s biology class and again the professor was, as usual, fifteen minutes late. The professor began, “Class, yesterday I said that I would hear no more of Dr. Flynn's pseudo science, but I will break my rule by asking the good doctor one more question. Dr. Flynn, how old do you think this earth is?

“I believe that it is between 6 and 10 thousand years old.”

“Well, Dr. Flynn, science says that the earth is 4.5 billion years old. We scientists date the earth by the scientific method and not by fairy tales contained in the Bible.”

“Dr. Alfonso, may I ask you a question?”

“Go ahead, Doctor Flynn, what is your question?”

“Sir, how old is coal?”

“I’d say about 300 million years old.”
“Sir, I've been told that the half life of Carbon 14 is 5,730 years and that after 95,000 years there is no detectable Carbon 14 left. Yet this 300 million year old coal has detectable Carbon 14. How do you explain that?”

“Perhaps contamination.”

“Sir, how old are diamonds?”

“Much older. I'd say around 2.9 billion years old.”

“Sir, did you know that they have found carbon 14 in diamonds and they are the hardest natural material on earth? How could they be contaminated?”

“Dr. Flynn, what are your sources? Can you back up your assertion or is this just phony baloney?”

Sir, here is one of my sources: ‘R.E. Taylor of the Department of Anthropology at the University of California–Riverside and of the Cotsen Institute of Archaeology at the University of California–Los Angeles teamed with J. Southon at the Keck Accelerator Mass Spectrometry Laboratory of the Department of Earth System Science at the University of California–Irvine to analyze nine natural diamonds from Brazil. All nine diamonds are conventionally regarded as being at least of early Paleozoic age, that is, at least several hundred million years old. So, if they really are that old they should not have any intrinsic carbon-14 in them. Eight of the diamonds yielded radiocarbon “ages” of 64,900 years to 80,000 years. The ninth diamond was cut into six equal fragments, which were each analyzed. They yield essentially identical radiocarbon “ages” ranging from 69,400 years to 70,600 years.’ This came from an article by Dr. Andrew Snelling. How can this be explained since
diamonds are the hardest natural material on earth and are impervious to contamination?

Ted continued, “In this context, here is a statement from the Smithsonian which I find interesting and informative: “... there’s evidence very curiously to suggest that the carbon may have originated near the surface of the Earth. The thinking there is that this carbon could have literally been carbon that was part of carbonate sediments of animals, plants, shells, whatever, that was carried down into the upper mantle of the Earth by the plate tectonics mechanism called subduction.”

At this point Dr. Alfonso again reacted with strong anger and said, “I now see that it is a waste of my time to talk with you, Dr. Flynn. Class, I'm sorry that I wasted your time in talking with this Dr. Flynn about matters which are so far above his head that he just doesn’t have the ability to grasp.” With that, Dr. Alfonso grabbed his brief case and left the building.

Students were talking with each other about their surprise that Dr. Alfonso was either unable or unwilling to answer the questions raised by Ted Flynn.

CHAPTER 14—THE CHARGES

Dr. Alfonso was in an uncontrollable rage when he learned that Ted gave out copies of the Bohlin document which he had forbidden to be distributed in his class. He went to the dean of the University to get Ted expelled from the University. His formal charge read as follows:
Ted Flynn, student in my freshman biology class, has deliberately disobeyed my specific order not to distribute religious literature to students in my class. He is a disrupting influence and is cleverly undermining my credibility and my authority. He left a note on my lectern calling me a fool. I believe in separation of church and state and, since this is a state university, I demand that we separate this religious fanatic from our midst so that sound science education can continue. I recommend that he be expelled from the University of Kentucky.

(Dr. Alfonso falsely assumed that Ted was the one who left the note with Psalms14:1 on his lectern.)

The next day this event was talked about all over the university campus. The Dean convened a meeting of the disciplinary committee composed of five doctors from five different disciplines. The decision was made to hold a hearing a week from the following Tuesday evening at 7:30. Both sides were allowed to bring witnesses and legal representation. The ACLU offered Dr. Alfonso three of its finest lawyers to represent him and he accepted. The ACLU offered no help to Ted.

Meanwhile the local newspaper and local TV stations picked up the story. Here is the story that ran in that newspaper:

UNIVERSITY OF KENTUCKY STUDENT CHARGED WITH VIOLATING CONSTITUTIONAL PRINCIPLES OF SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE AND WITH DISRESPECTING AND DISOBEYING HIS PROFESSOR.
HEARING BY THE COLLEGE
DISCIPLINARY COMMITTEE
SCHEDULED IN ONE WEEK

According to reliable sources, Ted Flynn is bringing religious literature into his science class and has distributed it in direct violation of his professor’s orders. The same sources claim that Mr. Flynn called his professor a “fool” right in front of the whole class of 42 students.

The professor is Dr. Thomas Alfonso, a highly respected and competent professor who has served the University for twenty seven years. The Dean said that he had the highest respect for Dr. Alfonso and looked forward to clearing up this issue quickly. He added that Dr. Alfonso has a spotless record with the University and has always had the respect of his students.

No one from the newspaper talked with Ted or any of his friends prior to publishing this one-sided article. The local TV stations picked up the story and followed the spin provided by the local newspaper. Local talk shows were following the line that young people today, unlike their parents, are disrespectful and rude and that it is high time to show them some tough discipline. Ted should be kicked out of the University! Why waste time with a hearing? People like Ted did not deserve a hearing!

Ted was under great stress. He met with Christians friends and prayed that God would intervene to help against these false and unjust charges. They also prayed that this persecution would not result in intimidation but that they would, like Peter in Acts, be even bolder in standing up for Jesus.

CHAPTER 15—THE DEVIL LOSES THIS ONE
Ted did not know it at the time, but Sarah Preston, a staff writer for the college paper, *Student Affairs*, was in the same biology class with Ted and had witnessed everything. Even better, she had tape recorded all his classes for her own benefit in order to study for the exams. Sarah was about to leave town for a short visit with her grandparents when a friend called her and read the charges Dr. Alfonso had lodged against Ted Flynn to have him expelled from the University. When Sara heard this, she cancelled her trip and wrote up a six page article about the whole episode and published it in the school paper. In this article, she quoted verbatim everything said by both Ted and Dr Alfonso from the beginning. It was distributed on Tuesday morning, a week before the hearing on Ted’s dismissal. The paper was also available on the web. The student radio station, WRFL, also picked up the story and actually interviewed two of the students who were in Dr. Alfonso’s class with Ted. Ben Wright was the student radio host for WRFL.

Ben said, “We have with us today, Demetri Hoppi, one of the students who was in Dr. Alfonso’s class with Ted Flynn witnessing what went on between Dr. Alfonso and Ted Flynn. Demetri how would you describe Dr. Alfonso?”

Demetri answered, “He is one of my finest teachers at the University. He is knowledgeable, fair and he loves to teach.”

“You witnessed the exchanges between Ted Flynn and Dr. Alfonso, did you not?”
“Yes.”

“Did Ted Flynn call Dr. Alfonso a fool and did he distribute religious material in direct defiance of Dr. Alfonso?”

“Yes and yes.

“Did he distribute the material in the classroom after Dr. Alfonso left?”

“Yes.”

Ben then changed his tone and said, “Mr. Hoppi, are you aware that we have a verbatim transcript of all of Dr. Alfonso’s classes. Are you sure that Ted Flynn called Dr. Alfonso a fool?”

Demetri, stuttering, with his face turning sheet white answered, “ah, ah, maybe not the exact words, but the meaning was there.”

“Mr. Hoppi, just some friendly advice, you might want to read the article in Student Affairs by Sara Preston before you give another interview so that you can get your lies straight. I’m just curious, why are you lying for Dr. Alfonso? Is it for a grade?”

“This interview is over,” with that, Demetri hurriedly left the studio and made himself unavailable for further interviews.

Sharon Miller was in another room and did not hear the interview with Demetri. She was brought in after Demetri left.

Ben stated, “We have another student, Sharon Miller, from Dr. Alfonso’s class who witnessed everything that has gone on in that class. Ms. Miller, how are you today?”
Sharon answered, “I'm upset over what has happened to Ted Flynn. Please call me Sharon.”

“Okay Sharon, why are you upset? Do you think Ted Flynn was treated unfairly?”

“Yes, I have read the charges and they are untrue.”

“Then Ted did not call Dr. Alfonso a fool and did not distribute religious materials in his classroom?”

“No and no. After Dr. Alfonso left, students came up to Ted and asked for the material. He refused to distribute them in the classroom. Those who followed him out of the classroom were able to obtain copies of the material.

“Then let me be clear, Ted handed out nothing while in Dr. Alfonso’s classroom?”

“Nothing.”

“How would you describe Dr. Alfonso as a teacher?"

“He is my teacher and I hope to get a descent grade in his class. I don’t want to say anything bad about him. He is very convinced that evolution is true and that other ideas should not even be heard.

“Thank you Sharon.”

Sarah Preston had published a word-for-word exchange between Dr. Alfonso and Ted. She also stated that she had never missed any of Dr. Alfonso’s classes and that she knew for a fact that Ted never called Dr. Alfonso a “fool” nor had he ever spoken disrespectfully in any way to Dr.
Alfonso. To the contrary, she gave specific quotations where Ted gave great respect to Dr. Alfonso, thanking him for allowing other views to be aired in his class. Needless to say, the University of Kentucky had never in its history experienced such a polarization. Those who believed in evolution and atheism sided with Dr. Alfonso without examining the evidence. Those who doubted evolution and those who believed in God and the Bible read and listened to everything they could about the issue. 

*The heart is the human gatekeeper. People with open hearts examine new and different information and people with closed hearts refuse to even consider for a moment facts which may challenge their cherished beliefs.*

The minister who preached for the church where creation meeting were held on Thursdays, read the *Student Affairs* article by Sharon Preston and published the web address in his church bulletin. He also spread the news during a local minister’s meeting and many of them helped spread the news about Preston’s article. Some didn’t because they bought into evolution. The ones who believed the Bible story of creation e-mailed their members and published the web address for the article. The news spread and soon, almost everyone with a computer in the Lexington area had heard of Sara’s article and, those who read all six pages of Sara’s article saw the whole truth. They saw that Dr. Alfonso clearly lied and that Ted Flynn had never been disrespectful nor had he called his professor a liar. They saw how Dr. Alfonso himself brought
religion into the classroom with his attack on the Bible and creation. They saw his taunting believers by asking for a show of hands of those who still believed Adam didn’t have a mother and comparing such belief with the Easter Bunny story. They observed his challenge to Ted to defend his belief with scientific facts and it appeared in Sara’s very accurate account that Ted did exactly that with courtesy and skill. It was also clear that students came to Ted and asked for the Bohlin report rather than Ted “handing them out.”

By the next day the radio stations and the TV stations had seen the article in the Student Affairs paper and were quickly revising their take on the story. All of a sudden they all wanted to interview Ted and Sharon Miller and Sara Preston. Sara made copies of all the tapes of the class and made them available to the local media.

In the history of news, there had never been such a quick and dramatic 180 degree turn in news spin as there was in this town! All the talk shows witnessed a reversal in public opinion. Callers were denouncing Dr. Alfonso and demanding his dismissal. They were saying that we need more students like Ted with the knowledge, courage and guts to stand up against these arrogant professors like Dr. Alfonso.

CHAPTER 16—GOD COMES THROUGH

Three days after Sara’s article was published, she was fired from the student newspaper on the charge that she failed to get proper
approval for the publishing of a professor's notes. The University President, Dr. Paul Randolph, who had been a very close friend to Dr. Alfonso, called a meeting with the controversial doctor and the Dean. The President had done his homework. He read a transcript of all Sara's tapes and knew the whole truth about what had happened in Dr. Alfonso's class from day one to the present. “Thomas” said Dr. Randolph, “what's going on here?”

Dr. Alfonso answered, “Paul, you’ve known me for years and we are good friends. You know that I would not have appealed for this young man's dismissal if it was not justified. He is a disruption in my class and is undermining my authority.”

“Did he call you a fool in front of the class?”

Dr. Alfonso, having heard that there were tapes of his class, hedged his bet by saying, “He left a note quoting Psalms 14:1 on my lectern and some of the students must have seen it.”

Dr. Randolph asked, “What does Psalms 14:1 say?”

Dr. Alfonso answered, “The fool says in his heart, "There is no God."

“How do you know that Ted Flynn wrote it?”

“Oh, I know he wrote it because he is the only one speaking out against me in class?”

“You call yourself a scientist and you base a charge this serious, which could absolutely ruin a young man's career, on an assumption!”
By this point Dr. Randolph’s anger was visibly rising. “Thomas, did Ted Flynn distribute religious literature in your class?”

“One of my students brought me a copy of what Mr. Flynn distributed.”

“Then you did not witness Ted Flynn distributing religious material in your class?”

“No, I assumed…”

Dr. Randolph interrupted him, “Thomas, you assumed? You are supposed to be a scientist and you assumed! By this point Dr. Randolph’s anger had reached a peak and he was practically screaming. “Are you reckless and calloused enough to destroy a young man’s reputation based on assumptions?

Thomas, one of your students in this same class taped every one of your classes from the beginning of the semester and I have read a transcript of the entire thing. You are lying and everyone who has read this transcript knows it. Ted Flynn has treated you with the greatest respect. You have deliberately attacked his religion in the most undignified way. Sir, you are a disgrace to this university and, if you didn’t have tenure, I would fire you right now! You said that it was possible for only one student in your class to receive an A. I strongly suggest that you rethink that statement.”

Dr. Alfonso was dumbfounded. He got up to leave when Dr. Randolph said, “Sit back down, sir, I’m not finished. You are not acting
like a professional. I understand that you are never earlier than 15 minutes late to class. This will stop. Henceforth, you will be on time for all your classes. I myself plan to drop by from time-to-time. Do you realize that by wasting 15 minutes of time of every student in your class (25 students) for just one semester just for that one class amounts to 18,000 minutes of wasted time? One more thing, I expect you to write a letter of apology to Ted Flynn and to the discipline committee withdrawing all charges against Ted Flynn. Am I clear, sir?”

There was a look of shock and disbelief on the face of Professor Alfonso. “Yes sir,” Dr. Alfonso muttered as he quickly left the office. Dr. Alfonso talked to his ACLU lawyers about the situation. He asked if he could sue Sara Preston for taping his classes without his knowledge and permission. The lawyers, who by this time, had read the transcripts warned him that it didn’t look too good for him in these tapes and that the more he fought it, the more the attention of the public would come to focus on the tapes and these tapes made a great case for creation. Furthermore, they warned, what was left of his reputation would be severely damaged.

The same week, a new documentary movie, Expelled, Intelligence Not Allowed,” by Ben Stein opened in 1,000 theaters across America. Many people in Lexington saw the movie and connected Ben Stein’s message with what Dr. Alfonso was attempting. The movie was a powerful voice for the freedoms of the First Amendment to the U.S.
Constitution and to the fact that there was credible scientific evidence for creation and that censorship in schools and the scientific community should be stopped. Meanwhile, the statement signed by over 800 scientists from prestigious universities around the world was getting more and more circulation so it became more difficult for evolutionists to pretend that all the science was on their side of the issue. (Google 800 Scientists and see the list for yourself.)

Many people thought that it was high time for the thought police and their guard dogs, the ACLU, to cease their persecution of people who disagreed with them.

Two letters were received the next day. The letter to Ted read:

```
Dear Mr. Flynn,

I sincerely apologize for the charges I lodged against you and I have withdrawn those charges with an apology to the discipline committee.

Signed: Dr. Thomas Alfonso
```

Ted was astounded and so were his friends, Lisa, Sara, Charles, Sharon and others. At the next class, for which Dr. Alfonso was on time, he announced that he had been spanked by the administration and the final question would not be to scientifically prove evolution. Instead, the final test would be taken from the textbook. Dr. Alfonso also announced
that he misspoke when he announced that only one A would be awarded in his class.

With all that out of the way, Dr. Alfonso began actually teaching the material in the biology textbook. For the remainder of the semester he stayed on task and was never late again.

This episode was talked about for many months. The tone of the University changed. It seemed that every professor took a lesson from this episode and actually left off the politics and concerned themselves with helping their students to achieve academic success. Some, especially in science and math, actually set up help sessions outside of class and invited students to come for individual assistance. Most of the students were aware of the change brought about by this event and they were thankful for it.

CHAPTER 17—Tragedy

Ted and Lisa continued to date. They also agreed that they wanted a pure relationship and that their relationship to God was more important than sensual pleasure. This decision seemed to intensify their love, trust and respect for each other. They were exclusive. Neither of them even thought about dating anyone else.

Dr. Alfonso never mentioned evolution or creation again for the remainder of the semester. It is interesting that evolutionists claim that
biology cannot be taught apart from evolutionary theory, yet, that is exactly what Dr. Alfonso did for the remainder of the year.

Ted, Sharon and Sara all made B’s in the class. This did not mean that Alfonso had forgotten what happened—wicked people never forgive; they seek revenge. A few times after that when Ted happened to meet Dr. Alfonso on campus, and if he happened to have a visitor or friend with him, he would introduce his friend to Ted and say, “This is the young Dr. Flynn I was telling you about.”

In Ted’s second year in college, in the middle of the first semester, the news went out that Lisa Bergman was missing. She was last seen in a park on the south side of town. There was a paved path circling the park where she often went jogging. The police asked for volunteers to help search the large woods next to the park. When Ted heard about it, he immediately left for the airport. On the way out he met Sharon Miller and asked her to go with him. Four eyes are better than two, he said and she agreed to go. They went to the Blue Grass Airport where Ted had joined the staff of flight instructors for extra income while in college. He rented a Cessna 150, a single engine, two place airplane with wings above the cabin (which gave the pilot a better view of the ground underneath) and started an aerial search for his friend Lisa. The airport was only a few miles from the park, so they were over the search area in minutes. Ted had his handheld GPS with him so, if they found anything, they could mark the location of the GPS and find it again from the ground. Ted was
flying just above the tree tops as slowly as he could to give them more time to look. They were flying a grid over the woods next to the park where Lisa was last seen. They had been flying about 45 minutes when Sharon saw something. Ted circled and returned to the place where Sharon thought she might have seen something. There was a human leg partly visible under some brush. Ted marked the lat/long on the GPS and asked Sharon to call 911 on her cell. The police were alerted and given the location.

![Cessna 150](image)

Cessna 150 like the one Ted flew

The police arrived at the scene and found Lisa partly covered with brush. She had been raped, beaten and left for dead. Though severely wounded, she was still breathing. If Ted and Sharon had not spotted Lisa from the air and help had not arrived promptly, she would have died. Ted flew the airplane back to the airport and
they quickly drove to the hospital to see how Lisa was doing. She was in a comma. The police left a guard at her door because whoever did this might try to murder her to keep her from being a witness against him. Detective Buffa of the city police department considered everyone who knew Lisa to be a suspect, including Ted and Sharon. They were not allowed in the hospital room.

CHAPTER 18—THE INNOCENT ARE CHARGED

Dr. Alfonso heard about what happened to Lisa and about Ted and Sharon’s role in finding her. He learned that Detective Buffa was the lead detective on the case. Dr. Alfonso then visited with the detective. It is not know what he said to him, but, following this visit, the detective began building a case against Ted and Sharon based on the small chance that someone from an airplane could have spotted Lisa’s body in such a short time. He called Ted and Sharon in for interviews in separate rooms and asked about every detail of the events around their flight and location of Lisa’s wounded body. Neither Ted nor Lisa asked for a lawyer because they knew they were innocent and didn’t feel the need for a lawyer. Buffa was relentless in his questioning fastening on every minor variation in their recollection of the event. Sharon said that Ted saw the body first and Ted remembered that it was Sharon who first spotted Lisa. (Actually, Sharon was not sure that
what she saw was Lisa and Ted was the one who definitely identified a human leg.) They were both put under arrest and the bond was set at $1,000,000. Ten percent, $100,000 had to be put up in cash. Ted’s family was not able to raise that much so he remained in jail. Sharon’s father bailed her out.

Meanwhile the local newspaper paper, The Lexington Post, ran this story:

**ACCORDING TO THE POLICE, LOCAL STUDENT AT U OF K WHO IS A PILOT AND GIRLFRIEND ARE SUSPECTED OF ATTACKING FELLOW STUDENT AND LEAVING HER TO DIE IN WOODS AJACENT TO CRAMER CITY PARK,**

Ted Flynn and his accomplice, Sharon Miller, are charged with beating Lisa Bergman and leaving her to die. Then, thinking she was surely dead and to play hero, they flew over the site where they left her and pretended to discover her body from the air. Detective Buffa saw through the deception and, after discovering lies in their contradictory testimony, he put them both under arrest. No one at present really knows the motive, but some have suggested that Sharon might have been jealous of Lisa and ordered her boyfriend Ted to murder Lisa and leave her in the woods. The doctors would not say whether or not Lisa had been raped. A police source said she might have been robbed.

The Post reporter interviewed the fixed base operator at Bluegrass Airport, Drew Fillmore, about the likelihood of spotting a body in the woods from the air which was almost completely covered with brush. He said that it would be almost impossible due to the thickness of the trees at that location. Other pilots present during the interview agreed with Mr. Fillmore.
Ted rented the Cessna airplane from Bluegrass Airport. Mr. Fillmore volunteered that Ted flew the plane less than one hour, which was unusual in any search effort. He would have had know exactly where to go, to have that small about of time on the aircraft, according to Mr. Fillmore.

It is known that Ted had a history class with Lisa and this is probably where he first met her. The Post interviewed students in the same class who had witnessed the two hanging out together and observed that they seemed to care about each other.

If this attempted murder was motivated by female jealousy, it is not the first case of this kind. There are dominating females who exercise enormous control over the men in their lives.

The Post reporter interviewed some citizens who voiced the opinion that we should make an example of these two to let the college students know that will not tolerate violence in this community.

It is known that one of the respected professors, Dr. Alfonso, had attempted to have Ted expelled from the University last year.

Ted’s friend and roommate, Carl Ray, brought him a copy of the Post. Ted could not believe the extreme degree of bias in the article. No one from the Post came to him for his side of the story nor did they interview his lawyer or any of his close friends. He and Sharon were presumed guilty by the Post. This kind of news coverage could have a strong corrupting influence on the jury pool should this case go to trial. All the local TV news stations followed the path chosen by the Post with totally one sided, “they’re guilty,” news presentations. CNN picked up the story and followed the spin provided by the Post, as did other networks, except Fox news which did not carry the story that evening. TV coverage showed Ted and
Eventually, Ted’s grandparents mortgaged their home and raised money for bail. As soon as he was released, Ted headed for the hospital where Lisa was still in a coma. The guard at the door of the intensive care unit stopped Ted and refused to allow him to see her. Her parents, influenced by the news media, ordered that Ted be kept out.

Ted had little choice about continuing his studies. With his mind totally occupied over his worry for Lisa and on the charges against him, he had no energy left to concentrate on his studies. Everyone who saw him on campus looked at him as if he were already condemned. Ted thought about it and figured that if the circumstances were switched and they were the accused and he had read the local paper and watched the TV news, he most likely would have reacted just as they were reacting toward him.

Ted dropped out of the university and went full time pilot and flight instructor for a business on Blue Grass Airport. The authorities did not allow Ted to leave the state, so he was limited to airports within the state of Kentucky. Ted and Sharon had saved Lisa’s life and now, due to one-sided press coverage, they were tried
and convicted by the press and in the eyes of public opinion before the case even went to trial!

The Lexington police were watching Ted day and night. There would be a police car behind him everywhere he went.

Ted was soon recognized as the best flight instructor in the school and he soon had a full load of students. He liked his job because it was so demanding. Flight instruction required 100% concentration almost all the time. One does not have time to meditate on his miseries because one small bit of inattention can lead to disaster like what happened to the Comair pilots taking off on the wrong runway. Ted especially liked giving instrument instruction, (teaching pilots to control the airplane by instruments with no outside vision so that they can legally fly in the clouds with zero visibility), because he and his student were keeping up a high speed scan looking and responding to each of six major instruments in a rapid fire manner. After two hours of this, teacher and student were totally enervated.

Carl Ray, Ted’s friend was allowed to visit Lisa and he brought regular reports to Ted and Sharon about Lisa’s condition. The coma persisted. Some doctors warned that she may never recover consciousness while other doctors thought she might come out of it, but they couldn’t predict when that might happen. Dr. Mosier came in and talked with Jesse Bergman, Lisa’s mother. Jesse
asked the doctor, “How long can a patient stay in a coma and still recover their consciousness?”

“We have the case of Terry Wallis from Arkansas. He was in a car wreck in 1984 and remained in a coma for nineteen years. He is still paralyzed but, in his own words, he can say anything he wants to say.”

At that point Lisa’s mother lost it and went into uncontrollable weeping.

Meanwhile, the prosecutor’s office continued to dig for information in order to convict Sharon and Ted. Whoever raped her used a condom so the police were unable to recover any DNA. They sent an investigator to Ted’s home town and discovered an unsolved case of the rape and murder of a 19 year old girl there. The Prosecutor’s office continued to leak information to the Post which was then picked up by the rest of the press to further convict Sharon and Ted in the mind of the public. The Post ran a story about the rape and murder case in Ted’s home town and all but accused him of being the guilty party with zero proof to back up their accusations! Not a day passed without the prosecutor and the Post managing to keep the story on the mind of the public. If nothing else was available, the Post would write a story about how wrong the court was for allowing bail and that this “dangerous man” was now flying for a business at Blue Grass Airport.
At that point Ted's employer, Samuel Burke, who liked Ted and supported him wholeheartedly up to this point, felt that the publicity was not good for his business, so he called Ted in for a talk. Samuel said, “Ted, you are by far the best flight instructor we’ve ever had on our staff. Because of you our business has grown until this unfortunate situation came up. Yesterday, two of our best customers went to our competitors on the other side of the field. They told me they changed because they did not want murderers flying them around the country. Ted, I'm very sorry, but I am going to have to let you go until this mess is cleared up.”

“I understand and I don’t blame you in the least. If I was in your place, I would do exactly what you have just done.”

There were tears in Samuel Burke’s eyes as Ted walked out of the office.

Ted, now fired from his job at the airport and under criminal indictment, went to seek other employment in Lexington since he had to stay in the state of Kentucky. Ted wondered if it might not have been easier if he had been an ex-con. Upon learning who he was and why he had to leave his last place of employment, no one wanted to hire Ted.

Ted was at the lowest point of his life—no job, no social life, under suspicion even by some of his friends, nothing to do.
Someone has said that an idle mind is the Devil's workshop. The girl he loved was in a coma and may never recover. He was not even allowed to visit her.

Ted had moments in which he intensely hated Dr. Alfonso whom he suspected poisoned the prosecutor's mind. He knew that Dr. Alfonso had visited the prosecutor's office and right after that the prosecutor went after Ted and Sharon. In his mind, he would imagine how he might kill Dr. Alfonso. He didn’t have a gun, but rifles and shot guns were easy to purchase. As far as going to prison, it looked like he would go anyway. In his distorted state of mind, he justified the idea of the killing by thinking about all future students whose minds would not be poisoned by this atheist professor.

Ted had not stopped going to church, though his love for God was at a very low level. How could God let this happen to him? First, he was almost expelled from the University on false charges simply because he stood up for God and creation and now, charges of murder. Where was God?

The very next Sunday, Ted was in church listening to Fred Clark’s sermon. His topic was persecution. In his sermon, he pointed out how Jesus was hated and persecuted and that he did not retaliate. Instead, while nailed to the cross, he prayed for his persecutors saying, “Father, forgive them for they do not know what
they are doing.” Then Brother Clark pointed out a Bible verse which stated: “In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted.”

What attitude should one have toward persecution? The preacher quoted:

Matthew 5:11-12 "Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven, for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.

The preacher next pointed out Jesus’ teaching that, instead of hating our enemies, we should love them and pray for them. Then he surveyed persecution in the only history book in the New Testament—the book of Acts. The persecution of Jesus’ disciples started, he said, on the day the church started with the false accusation that the disciples were drunk (Acts 2: 13). Next, in Acts chapter four, Peter and John were put in prison. Then in Acts chapter five, all the apostles were arrested and beaten. In chapter seven, Stephen was stoned to death and, from that point on, a great persecution broke out against the Christians.

Ted felt totally convicted by the words of Jesus. The Devil had tricked him into doing exactly the opposite of what a true disciple should do. He met with Fred Clark after services and confessed his struggle to him.
“Brother Clark, as you know I have been persecuted by Dr. Alfonso. I have not acted like a true disciple. Though I would never carry it out, I have hated him so much that I have had thoughts of murdering him. Now, Jesus tells me through your sermon that I should rejoice at my persecution and actually love and pray for my enemies. I don’t know if I can do it?”

“Ted, anyone can keep God's easy commands. For example, the Bible says husbands love your wives. I have a wonderful wife and have no trouble loving her. In fact, I don’t think I could keep from loving her if I tried. The separation of nominal Christians from true Disciples of Jesus is in situations just like yours. Abraham’s true test came when God ordered him to take Isaac to a mountain three days journey away and offer him as a sacrifice to God. Now, God has given you an equally hard command. Love and pray for Dr. Alfonso.”

“It seems so difficult. How can I do that?”

“I suggest some time in fasting and prayer.”

“That I can do and I will.”

So, Ted left the church service with a determination to fully carry out the advice he had been given. He did pray for Dr. Alfonso. Ted turned more and more to God. He fasted and prayed for Lisa to recover and read his Bible. His faith was strengthened by the experience.
CHAPTER 20—SURPRISE AT THE HOSPITAL

Two weeks later Lisa came out of the comma. Her mother was in the room when she woke up. Her mother asked if Ted Flynn did this to you.

“Heavens no,” Lisa shouted, “I saw my attacker and he definitely was not Ted.”

Later the police were called in and she gave the police a description of the assailant.

Lisa asked, “Mom, where is Ted?”

“I don’t know?”

“Has he been here?” Jesse, not wanting to tell her daughter that she and her husband had ordered Ted to stay away, answered, “No, he has not visited.”

Lisa was devastated. Jesse saw the hurt in her daughter’s face and wanted to tell her the truth, but fearing her husband, she did not.

“Mom, where is my cell phone.”

“It has been missing since the attack.”

Lisa wanted to call Ted but could not remember his number. Meanwhile another of Lisa’s friends came in and filled her in on the whole story about her rescue and the role Ted and Sharon played in it and that Ted and Sharon had been arrested for the attack on her and that the guard had orders to keep Ted from
visiting her after he was released on bail. Lisa was even more hurt that her mother had lied to her. Jesse, Lisa’s mother, remembered the passage in the Bible: “Be sure that your sin will find you out.”

After Ted was informed by authorities that charges against him and Sharon had been dropped and that Lisa had regained consciousness, he again went to the hospital and this time the guard allowed him in. The guard was still there because, at this point, the true attacker had not been found. When Ted saw the love of his life lying there in the hospital bed, he was overcome with emotion and tears. Lisa too was deeply moved and overjoyed to see Ted again. They hugged for a long time, chocked with emotion before either of them could speak.

“Lisa, I was so worried about you.”

“I'm so sorry that the authorities falsely accused you and Sharon.”

“How are you feeling?”

“I have a slight headache, other than that, I think I am okay.”

They talked for thirty minutes before the hospital staff asked Ted to leave and allow her to rest. Ted was there every day until she was released from the hospital.

Lisa knew that she had been raped and she was worried how this might affect their relationship. “Ted, you know that I was raped, don't you?”
“Yes, I know.”

“How do you feel about that and what if I am pregnant?”

“Lisa, this was in no way your fault and it will not affect my feelings for you. I love you unconditionally.”

Ted’s former employer heard the news and called Ted with apologies and asked him to come back to work as a charter pilot. Ted accepted and, now that all charges had been dropped, Ted could accept out of state charters.

Ted was amazed at how things changed soon after his heart and attitude changed. He went from hating Dr. Alfonso and wanting to kill him to praying for him and trusting God. Now, Lisa was conscious again, all charges were dropped against him and Sharon and he got his job back with restrictions lifted as to where he could fly! Ted began to reflect how God had provided for him all along. What if Sarah Preston had not been in his Biology class? What if she had not taped all the classes? If she had been absent even once, Dr. Alfonso could have said that was the class in which Ted disrespected him. What if she had gone to visit her grandparents without hearing about the charges against Ted? What if Lisa had not awakened out of her coma? Ted reflected on how good God really is.

Meanwhile, Lisa found out that she was not pregnant by the rapist, thank God!
CHAPTER 21—THE REAL CRIMINAL IS FOUND

Ted and Sharon were totally exonerated with apologies from the authorities. Lisa helped a sketch artist draw a picture of the attacker which was publicized by the TV stations. This led to the arrest of Owen Haskell, a gym teacher in the local high school. Lisa had to drop out of college for the semester because of her injuries. She returned to her parent’s home in Monticello about a hundred miles away. Ted flew down to see her almost every weekend. It was only 82 miles by air and he could fly it in about 40 minutes each way. Lisa was able to drive now and she would meet him at Wayne County Airport just outside Monticello.

Up to this point, Lisa had never flown with Ted. He selected one of those calm evenings about sunset when all the thermals had died down which made for a smooth flight, and asked Lisa to ride with him over the city. She would be able to see her parents’ house from the air. Lisa agreed. Ted had flown passengers as a Part 135 commercial pilot and knew how to calm and reassure his passengers. He knew how to make the flight less frightening by making shallow turns and smooth actions. Sometimes new pilots take their friends flying and the first thing they want to do is show their skill by performing a stall or some other wild maneuver. After this their friends often refuse to ever fly with them again. Lisa, though frightened at first, began to relax and enjoy the flight and
found her house from the airplane. They returned to the airport where Ted made a gentle, smooth landing. She loved it and loved Ted for giving her such a wonderful experience.

The following weekend, Ted was in Monticello again and asked her to go for a ride. She readily agreed. Ted put her in the left seat and showed her how to do the takeoff. After they leveled off, he showed her the first fundamentals of how to fly an airplane. She learned to pitch, roll and yaw the plane with the controls. She loved it! Ted was happy that the love of his life could love flying as he did. If she’d never agreed to fly, he would not have loved her less, but this was a bonus having her to share his love of flying.

The following week she agreed to fly back to Lexington with Ted and stay a week with one of her female friends in Lexington. Ted spent every evening with her. The following weekend, he flew her back home to Monticello.

Meanwhile, the press gave little to no attention to the fact that they had been attempting to convict two innocent people with their stories. The Post now focused on Owen Haskel, the coach, and only mentioned in one short sentence on page four that charges had been dropped against Ted and Sharon. There was no apology nor was there any mention of the unfair treatment Ted and Sharon received in previous articles.
Ted spent the remainder of that school year flying charter and doing flight instruction. The following September Ted re-enrolled at the University to continue working on his degree. His advisor placed him in a broad range of courses including chemistry, U.S. history, English literature, art appreciation and algebra. Lisa too returned to the university to continue her education.

Ted kept dating Lisa on weekends and taking her to her church. Lisa’s heart began to change as she observed Ted’s Christian morals in action during their times together. He was the kind of man she wished to marry some day and have as a father of her future children.

CHAPTER 22—UNUSUAL MARRIAGE PROPOSAL

Ted attended a church where Reverend Fred Clark preached. He enjoyed the sermons because the preacher backed up his doctrine with the Bible. He and the preacher spent time together and Brother Clark attended the Thursday evening creation meetings and agreed with Ted on the creation/evolution controversy.

Ted was deeply in love with Lisa and wanted to marry her, but he was troubled by the fact that they were in different churches with diametrically opposed teachings. Lisa’s church never talked about the new birth and they baptized infants.

As they sat in a booth at a local restaurant, Ted said, “Lisa, I don’t know if you would even consider marrying me, but I am head over heels in
love with you. I’ve been thinking about this for weeks. We go to different churches with wildly differing doctrines even though we worship the same Jesus and believe in the same Bible. Our churches seem to agree on the Bible but differ on their separate man made creeds. I don’t feel right in asking you to leave your convictions to join my church and I cannot in good conscience support some of the doctrines in your church. I am no theologian; your church may be right and mine wrong or visa versa. I have thought of marrying you anyway, but then, when we have children, what do we tell them? Do we say Daddy’s church is right and Mama’s church is wrong, or do we say Mama’s church is right and Daddy’s church is wrong? Or do we say to our children that doctrine is unimportant and it doesn’t matter what church you go to or whether or not you even go to church? Do we want to confuse our children about the most important issue they will ever face in their entire lives—what to do about worshipping and pleasing God?”

Lisa replied with tears flowing down her cheeks, “Ted, I love you with all my heart and marrying you is my dream. If you had asked me tonight to marry you without bringing up the thought of what to tell our future children, I would have screamed yes! Our differing religion is a big problem. Now that you have focused on the issue of children, I don’t see how we could marry without agreeing on religion. Not only is my religion important to me, it is of supreme importance to both my parents. I have the most loving parents in the world. My Dad took two jobs so he could
pay my way through college and, if I left his church, it would break his heart. I just couldn’t do that to him.”

With those words, Lisa burst into tears and left the restaurant and started walking to the dorm which was about six blocks away, blubbering as she walked. Ted paid the bill, caught up with her and tried to persuade her to allow him to drive her to her dorm. Lisa refused to get into his car and said, “Ted, we are in love and marriage is impossible. If we keep seeing each other, we’ll only make it worse. Please go and find someone else in your own church and I'll try to do the same.” With those words the two parted, Lisa walked home and Ted drove down to South Elkhorn Creek and went for a very long prayer walk along the banks of the stream. While Ted mediated, a Scripture came to his mind, Luke 14:26:

“If anyone comes to me and does not hate his father and mother, his wife and children, his brothers and sisters—yes, even his own life—he cannot be my disciple.

It bothered Ted a little that Lisa allowed her Dad to regulate her religion instead of Christ and the Bible. She didn’t seem at all concerned about what the truth was, but what pleased her Dad. Ted’s love for Lisa caused him to quickly dismiss these thoughts.

They didn’t see each other for about three weeks, during which time, neither went out with anyone else and neither could think about anything else. They were deeply in love.

CHAPTER 23—The Religious Divide
Ted had visited Lisa’s church in Lexington many times and listened to her minister, Reverend Charles Hoffmiester, very closely, so he knew most of his basic doctrines. Ted liked Minister Hoffmiester and considered him a friend. The Minister showed great interest in flying and he and Ted spent hours discussing Ted’s favorite subject—aviation. Ted even took him and his wife, Coleen, for a flight over Lexington. They both loved it. Coleen brought a camera and took a picture of their church building from the air. Ted was troubled about the differences in doctrine between their two churches. Was there any way to reconcile?

Ted made the following chart to summarize and think about the doctrinal differences between his and Lisa’s church:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>DOCTRINE</th>
<th>Ted’s church</th>
<th>Lisa’s church</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>The New Birth</td>
<td>Pentient believer</td>
<td>Sprinkled at birth, new birth never mentioned</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Immersed in water to wash sins away</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lord’s Supper</td>
<td>Never observed</td>
<td>Observed every Sunday</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Confessing sins</td>
<td>Only to God, if ever</td>
<td>confessed sins to each other</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emotionalism</td>
<td>Tends to be cold</td>
<td>Excited emotional worship</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Then Ted thought about what they had in common. They both believed that the Bible was the only authority in religion and that the Bible was from God. They both believed in the Virgin birth and the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus Christ. Ted then considered what they differed on and the teaching of Lisa’s church that once saved one cannot be lost and this troubled him. The New Birth seemed to him to be the most serious of their differences, though Ted himself was still wrestling with the question of the new birth.

Ted had continued to attend Community Church on Thursdays and had heard several guest speakers with Ph.D.’s in various areas of science speaking to uphold the Bible. Dr. Alfonso never came through with any true science to back up his original lecture. Ted, after examining the evidence, retained his faith and it grew even stronger. They both believed that Jesus Christ was born of a virgin, that He was God in the flesh and that He died, was buried and that on the third day He rose again never to die again. Ted reasoned, were not these areas of commonality more important that the differences between the two separate religions? Should not reasonable men, who loved God and His Son, Jesus, be able to search out the truth of the Bible on these topics which divide them and come together in unity? Ted had been reading his Bible regularly now and was determined to read it cover-to-cover. He found a concordance and looked
up the word unity. He found a most appropriate Scripture. The night Jesus was arrested just prior to his crucifixion, he prayed the following prayer:

John 17:20-23 "My prayer is not for them alone. I pray also for those who will believe in me through their message, that all of them may be one, Father, just as you are in me and I am in you. May they also be in us so that the world may believe that you have sent me. I have given them the glory that you gave me, that they may be one as we are one: I in them and you in me. May they be brought to complete unity to let the world know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me.

If Ted understood this prayer correctly, Jesus didn’t like disunity among believers either. Rather, he prayed that all who believed in him would be brought to complete unity so that the world would believe that God the Father had sent him. Now, Ted thought, we have, instead of the unity Jesus prayed for, thousands of different churches with different names and contradictory doctrines all claiming to worship the same Jesus! What to Ted seemed to be even worse, none of these ministers seemed to be making any efforts to reconcile with each other. Ted remembered one preacher at a church he once visited saying, “Thank God for all the different kinds of churches so that each of us can have a church of his choice.” Ted thought that Jesus must be very sad to hear this kind of talk.

Ted had an idea! What if he could get these two good scholarly men, the ministers of his and Lisa’s respective churches, to debate each other on the topics which divided them!
Ted first called Lisa on the phone.

“Lisa, what do you think about the idea of asking our respective ministers to debate each other over the doctrinal matters which divided our two churches?

Lisa, missing Ted very much, said, “Ted, I never heard of such a thing, but, if they will agree to it, I think it is worth a try.”

Ted met with his minister at a McDonald’s restaurant to discuss the possibility of a debate on issues which divided the two churches.

“Brother Clark, thank you for meeting with me. I have an unusual request. I want you and my girl friend’s minister, Reverend Charles Hoffmiester, to debate each other on the issues which divide your two churches.”

“Why do you want us to do that, Ted?”?

“Lisa and I want to get married and we both hold firm convictions about the doctrines of our respective churches, though I think she is more into staying united with her Dad’s religion in order not to offend him. I don’t feel like asking her to compromise her beliefs and join our church and I certainly don’t feel right about leaving our church to join hers. We want children and we think it would be devastating to the spiritual future of our children to bring them up in a divided family. Would we teach them that Dad’s church is right and Mom’s is wrong or visa versa? Or would we tell them that doctrine is unimportant?”
“I see your problem, but I have never debated anyone, even in school.”

“Brother Clark, if Jesus were in your place right now, what would he do? I don’t know much about the Bible, but I did research the idea of unity and I found Jesus’ prayer in John 17 urging all his followers to be unified.” Ted then quoted the following words of Jesus: “May they be brought to complete unity to let the world know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me.

“Wow! You are serious, Ted. I will agree to pray about it and get back to you.”

“Thank you Brother Clark.”

The following Friday Ted met Charles Hoffmiester at his office.

“Welcome young Ted. What is going on with you?”

Ted then gave the same story to Charles Hoffmiester that he had previously given to Fred Clark.

Hoffmiester asked, “Will Fred Clark agree to a debate?”

“I have talked with him about it and he agreed to pray about it and get back with me.”

“Okay, I will consider it. I will call Fred Clark and talk with him about it. Then I’ll get back with you, Ted, and let you know what we’ve decided.”

CHAPTER 24—THE MINISTERS PONDER THE QUESTION

Charles Hoffmiester had recently witnessed a local minister who went around town with multiple titles. He wanted everybody to call him
“Reverend.” Not content with this, he asked that they also address him as “Bishop,” later he decided that, because he taught young men in his church to preach, he should also be called “Doctor.” Strung together his proper title would be, “the most Reverend Bishop and Holy Doctor Migraine (not his real name).” This going to the extreme caused Charles Hoffmiester to consider what the Bible said about titles and special clothing for ministers. As he read his Bible, he noticed that even apostles were addressed by their names without titles. He read Peter did this or Paul did that and John, Barnabas, Timothy, etc., were addressed by their names without titles. Then he read Jesus’ words after he condemned special “clergy clothes,” he said:

Matthew 23:8-10 “But you are not to be called ‘Rabbi,’ for you have only one Master and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth ‘father,’ for you have one Father, and he is in heaven. Nor are you to be called ‘teacher,’ for you have one Teacher, the Christ.

Then, while Charles Hoffmiester was thinking about this subject, he remembered this news story in an old June 2007 newspaper telling about President Bush’s visit to Rome:

**Vatican City - US President George W Bush drew gasps at the Vatican on Saturday by referring to Pope Benedict XVI as "Sir" instead of the expected "His Holiness", pool reporters said.**

Charles Hoffmiester also observed that the title “Reverend” was never applied to a minister of the gospel anywhere in the entire Bible.
The word reverence appeared 15 times in the NIV version and mostly it applied to God. For example,

Psalms 111:9 *He hath sent redemption unto his people; He hath commanded his covenant for ever: Holy and reverend is his name.* ASV

Then Charles remembered a man who took glory to himself that should have been reserved for God,

Acts 12:21-23 *And upon a set day Herod arrayed himself in royal apparel, and sat on the throne, and made an oration unto them. And the people shouted, saying, “The voice of a god, and not of a man.” And immediately an angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.*

Charles decided that he did not want to come even remotely close to doing what Herod did here is this passage of Scripture.

Charles also considered the matter of special clothing for ministers. He didn’t read this anywhere in the Bible either. It appeared that not even Jesus wore clothing to set himself apart from others. When Judas betrayed Jesus, he didn’t say, “Arrest the man in a gold robe,” instead he identified Jesus for his enemies by kissing Jesus. Charles put aside his clergy robe.

Later, Charles Hoffmiester shared these things with Fred Clark.

“Fred, I've been studying out the practice of special titles and clothing for clergy and, to my surprise, the Bible does not seem to support the
idea, rather, it seems to condemn it. When I read my Bible I don’t read, ‘the most Reverend and Holy Father Matthew’ or ‘the Right Reverend Timothy,’ instead I read simply Timothy, Paul, Peter, Barnabas, etc.’ What do you think?

“Wow! Charles, may I call you Charles, (with a chuckle)?”

“Yes, please do.”

“Wow! I have never given this idea any thought, but, as I think about it, I can’t think of any place where the Bible teaches us to use titles and special clothing.”

Charles responded, “In fact, it seems to me that Jesus condemned both when speaking about the Pharisees and teachers of the Law in Matthew 23: 5-11

“Everything they do is done for men to see: They make their phylacteries wide and the tassels on their garments long; they love the place of honor at banquets and the most important seats in the synagogues; they love to be greeted in the marketplaces and to have men call them ‘Rabbi.’

“But you are not to be called ‘Rabbi,’ for you have only one Master and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth ‘father,’ for you have one Father, and he is in heaven. Nor are you to be called ‘teacher,’ for you have one Teacher, the Christ. The greatest among you will be your servant

Fred, what do you understand from this Scripture?

“Charles, please allow me some time to study this out and I'll get back to you.”

Three days later, Charles and Fred met to talk about titles and special clothing. Fred said, “Charles, you have convinced me, from this day forward you
may call me ‘Fred.’ I have talked with my elders and, with some reluctance, they have agreed with me. I will drop the title ‘Reverend’ and lay aside my clergy robe and dress like the other men in my church.”

Charles was impressed with Fred’s openness to change a practice that went back hundreds of years simply because it was not sanctioned in the Bible.

(Note to reader: hereafter, to honor their own request, we will simply refer to these ministers by their names without using titles of any kind. The author does not mean any disrespect to them or anyone else nor does he want to offend anyone. He simply wants to respect the wishes of these two ministers.

Additional note from the author: the fact that these two ministers had soft and humble hearts to change a long established practice in order to square more completely with their understanding of the Bible, the ultimate authority, bodes well for what we might expect from them in the future.)

Charles Hoffmiester talked the debate idea over with his wife, Coleen. “Honey, Fred Clark has asked me to debate him on the issues that divide our two churches.”

“Why would he ask that of you?

“He asked because, a young man in his church, Ted Flynn, wants to marry our Lisa Bergman, who attends our church. The young couple talked it over and, since they both want children, they could not stand the thought of rearing their future children in a divided home. So, Ted Flynn asked each of the two ministers, Fred Clark and me, to debate the issues which divide us with the hope of achieving unity.”
“Wow that is most unusual. What are your thoughts, honey?

“I have spent thirteen years in the ministry preaching for very small churches little noticed by my church’s hierarchy. Perhaps this debate, if it goes well, would cause them to notice me.”

Coleen, seeing the enthusiasm in her husband, said, “Honey, you are more than well qualified to debate Fred Clark. Wives talk and I know that he has never studied Greek or Hebrew and you have studied both. You have seven years of seminary training and Fred Clark only has a four year college degree.”

“You know, Coleen, young Ted showed me the prayer Jesus prayed the night of his betrayal and pointed out the place where Jesus prayed for unity of all believers. I then thought about our minister breakfasts that we have once a month and the fact that we have never even mentioned the subject of unity. Have we, including myself, conceded this point to Satan without even a struggle?

“I don’t see how you can refuse?”

“Neither do I.”

Charles and Coleen had three small children. He was 44 years old with brown eyes and heavy black hair which he wore down to his collar. He was about six feet tall and of medium build. He spoke slowly and
deliberately in a strong, deep voice measuring the emphasis given to each word in his sentences.

His opponent, Fred Clark, Ted’s minister, was 37 years old, educated in a four year Bible college, married with two sons and a daughter. Fred was six feet and a hundred and eighty pounds. He had a deep bass voice and walked with a slight limp from an automobile accident. Both ministers preached for churches of similar sizes—around 300 members. Neither church seemed to be really growing. Year after year they gained some, but lost about the same number so that over all membership was rather stable.

Fred Clark talked with his wife, Patricia, about the idea of a debate with Charles Hoffmiester.

“Patricia, young Ted Flynn met with me today and asked me to debate his girl friend’s minister, Charles Hoffmiester. They want to get married, but are fearful of bringing up children in a religiously divided home. They hope that the debate will bring about unity between our two churches. What do you think about the idea?”

“I like the idea. Honey, you are more than equal to Charles Hoffmiester.”

“He has a seven year Masters of Divinity Degree and has studied both Greek and Hebrew and I have studied neither. Are you sure that I am his equal?”
“Look at the qualifications of Jesus’ apostles, none were Rabbis. He chose fishermen and a tax collector. Honey, your strength is your knowledge of the Bible and your relationship with Jesus.”

“You are right about the apostles, but I am unsure about the idea of a debate. Is that contrary to the Spirit of Jesus?”

“Jesus debated his opponents, look at chapter 22 in Matthew. The Sadducees were teaching the false doctrine that there is no resurrection from the dead. Jesus used their own Scriptures and proved them wrong. He also debated the Pharisees and Herodians on the issue of taxes and put them to silence then Jesus stumped the experts on the question about whose son the Messiah (the Christ) would be. And, oh yes, Stephen debated the unbelieving Jews in Acts chapters 6 & 7.

“Wow! Sweetheart, I want you by my side, if I do decide to debate Charles.”

Fred, still reluctant, talked with the elders of his church about it. They met, talked it over and told Fred that they had no objections to the debate provided that the rules of the debate could be worked out to everyone’s satisfaction. Winston, one of the elders, was especially favorable to the idea of a debate. He said, “Shouldn’t a biblical debate by sincere, capable men help the debaters themselves as well as their audience to see more clearly the truth of God on the subjects under examination? If we have the truth, we have nothing to fear. If we don’t, we’d be fools not to learn from someone who does. After all, even people
running for political office debate each other while the American voters listen and decide which candidate is best for them.”

CHAPTER 25—FRED TAKES IT TO GOD

Permission and preparation

Fred Clark still was not sure of God’s will concerning the debate issue. He spent three hours in prayer that night asking God to give him wisdom about the question of a public debate. The next morning he talked with his wife, Patricia. “Honey, I spend a long time in prayer last night about this debate question. Charles Hoffmiester has more education than I have. He knows Greek and Hebrew and I don’t. I would have to have the blessings of God and His Holy Spirit to succeed.”

“You are right.”

“Jesus did a forty day fast before he began his ministry. Do you think I should take this question to God in a forty day fast? I will need godly wisdom if I am to defend what I believe is the truth against such a capable man. Do you think Jesus left us a record of his long fast as an example for me to follow? You know Peter said that Christ left us an example that we should follow in his steps.”

Patricia answered, “I honestly don’t know, but my first concern would be for your health.”

“If I do go on this fast, I will need your permission because you would have to agree on no sex for forty days.”
“You have my permission and my blessings.”

Patricia agreed to fast some herself during that same time. Fred Clark was not sure that he could endure a 40 day fast, but then Fred remembered the words of the Apostle Paul when in Asia he was under great pressure beyond his ability to endure and despaired even of life. This happened so that Paul and others might not rely on themselves but on God. Just trusting in his own strength, Fred knew that could not do it because he loved to eat, but, with God’s help, he was certain of success.

Fred talked with the elders of his church and asked them for permission to be absent from his duties for forty days and nights. That meant that they would have to take Fred’s place in the pulpit for about six Sundays. Fred offered to surrender his salary for the 40 days. The elders met and decided to continue his salary.

Fred decided to make it a juice fast. He would drink fruit juice, but no other food of any kind. He began his fast on Sunday night and fasted for the following 40 days and 40 nights. He purchased a tent and spent the days and nights away from his home in the woods in various state parks. Many of these parks had limits about how long a camper could stay without moving, usually two weeks. Fred was fasting, not only from food and sex, but from television, radio, newspapers or anything which would distract him from his spiritual pursuit.

Prior to his fast, Fred checked with his medical doctor and the doctor gave him a book to read on long fasts. The book recommended
enemas once a day to keep the body cleaned out. Fred decided that once every other day would be enough. This did seem like a good healthy practice. It kept the poison stuff cleaned out of the body and made possible more rapid recovery when the fast ended.

Fred went to the store and purchased a tent which would be his home for the next 40 days. He was following the example of Jesus who went into the wilderness for his 40 day fast.

AUTHOR’S NOTE TO READERS: Fred’s experience during his 40 day fast has been recorded in Epilogue of this book. The author would suggest that you go there and read it before continuing, but, if that does not intrigue you, you may decide to continue reading from here.

CHAPTER 26—THE FAST ENDS AND THE DECISION MADE

One the 40th night Fred set his alarm clock for 11:30 p.m. He then got up and drove to his home where he picked up Patricia and proceeded to look for a restaurant that was still open. If you read the Epilogue, you already know that Fred’s favorite restaurant closed at midnight. Satan was there to tempt Fred to break his fast early so that he could get the delicious meal at this restaurant, but, like Moses with Pharaoh, Fred refused to compromise even one second. Patricia and Fred drove for miles and every restaurant in their area was closed for the evening. They finally found a Denny’s restaurant which was open. Fred
had read where one coming off a long fast must eat very little at first. This was bogus information for Fred at least because he ate a full meal with steak and suffered no ill effects. The next week Fred took his wife on a vacation to Hot Springs, Arkansas. There was a wonderful barbecue place just north of town which helped Fred as he began to regain his strength.

Fred Clark came out of his fast with the conviction that it was God's will for him to proceed with the debate. One Scripture stood out in his mind as he asked God for guidance with regard to the wisdom of debating:

*I Peter 3:15* But in your hearts set apart Christ as Lord. Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect,

Fred highlighted two words in this verse which he planned to incorporate in his presentations—*gentleness* and *respect*. He met with Charles Hoffmiester and discussed the plans for the debate. To Ted Flynn's surprise and delight, the ministers decided to debate each other.

They agreed to hold the three night debate in their respective church buildings—the first two debates would be held in the Hoffmeister building and the last one in the Clark building. There would be a moderator from the Clark group during the first two nights and one from the Hoffmeister group for the last night. The moderators’ main task was
to keep time. Neither preacher was allowed to interrupt the other during his presentation.

CHAPTER 27

THE DEBATE

ISSUES FOR THE THREE NIGHT DEBATE

1ST. NIGHT: Salvation, the new birth, is by faith alone.

Hoffmiester affirms and Clark denies

_____________________________________________________

2nd. NIGHT: Once born again, a child of God cannot be lost and end up in hell

Clark affirms and Hoffmiester denies

_____________________________________________________

3rd. NIGHT A HODGE Podge OF ISSUES: Lord’s Supper, Confession of Sins, the mode of baptism and infant baptism because of original sin

_____________________________________________________

Each speaker was to have two 20 minute sessions each night. Both were privileged to give the other written questions which were also made available to the audience through the PowerPoint projections. Each speaker agreed that the Bible was the sole source of authority in settling questions of doctrinal truth.

The town’s main newspaper picked up the story, then the local radio and TV stations, were reporting it. Soon most everyone in Lexington
was talking about the debate. The reporter who wrote the story found out that Ted was the instigator of the debate and, after interviewing Ted, he discovered Ted’s motivation—unifying two very different denominations with much contradictory doctrine so that he and his girl friend could get married and raise their children in the same church. Some were indignant that these ministers would question each other’s doctrine while others were intrigued. They thought that it was a great idea! Although 150 to 200 years ago it was not uncommon for denominational ministers to hold debates, nothing like this had happened around Lexington in recent memory. Others began to write letters to the editor about how much money was wasted on church buildings, utilities and salaries which could have been put to better use, perhaps even feeding the poor if all these different denominations could come together and be unified. Sometimes, on the same city block, one could find three different denominations each with a mere handful of attendees in a very large building in their Sunday morning services. Businesses were consolidating and saving money, why not churches? A qualified minister could preach to a thousand with the same effort he expends on a church of 75. Many churches had huge auditoriums which were nearly full years ago, but now some had 20 or 30 people on Sunday sitting in a place which could seat hundreds. They each paid huge utility bills and salaries for separate ministers.
Besides, look at all the confusion and family divisions brought on by divisions among denominations all claiming to believe in and worship the same Jesus! With Mom going to one church and Dad going to another the children were torn between the two. After all, Jesus’ prayer the last night prior to his arrest was for all his followers to be perfectly united so that the world would believe that God had sent him, John 17:20-23. Now, not only did the world not believe, but many members’ own children were losing their faith. Even in theological seminaries many if not most of the professors are teaching evolution and that the Bible is not an accurate history. Perhaps religious division could be a contributing cause of this situation.

The first night of the debate arrived and 45 minutes before time to begin there were far too many people to get into the small church. Seeing the problem, the mayor of the city offered the civic building which held over 4,000 people. The announcements were quickly made and the crowd moved to the civic auditorium. (The ACLU later brought suit because the city was supporting religion.) The debate was one hour late in starting because of the move. The Lexington police force was out helping move the traffic. There were television crews present, some from the big networks and it took time for them to get their cameras and other equipment ready.

Ted, Lisa and their families were all present and seated on the second row eager to hear the debate. Lisa’ Parents had driven down from Monticello, Kentucky for the debate. They had objected to the debate and
used all their influence to stop it, but Minister Hoffmiester had given his word and refused to yield to their pressure. Ted was saying a silent prayer that this debate would result in unity at least between him and Lisa.

Another interesting fact was that nearly every denominational minister in Lexington, and there were many, were not only present for this first night of debate, but continued to attend it to the end. Equally interesting, there were numerous denominational ministers from around the state of Tennessee and from other states as well.

The moderator was an elderly man in his early 70’s, about 6’ tall with a mostly bald head. He stood, his hands trembling, got everyone’s attention and then introduced the two speakers. He then read the propositions to be debated and the positions each preacher had taken. With the agreement of the speakers, the moderator announced that the speakers would accept questions from the audience which would be collected and answered the following night by each preacher. “One final note,” the moderator said, “each speaker has requested that he be called by his first name without any title like Reverend, in keeping with biblical tradition. This should in no way be interpreted as disrespect by anyone.”

Charles Hoffmeister, as agreed, was the first speaker affirming that one was saved, born again, by faith only.

Charles Hoffmiester began, “Ladies and Gentlemen, it is an honor to stand before you tonight to defend what I honestly believe is the truth. You may wonder why Fred and I are debating. We are debating because a
young pilot by the name of Ted Flynn, who attends Fred’s church, asked us to debate. Ted is dating a young lady from my church, Lisa Bergman, and they want to get married. They love each other very much, but, after reflection, they do not want to bring up their future children in a divided home with daddy going to one church and mother going to another. What would they say to their children about the most important topic imaginable? Do they say Daddy’s church is right and Mommy’s church is wrong or vice versa? Or do they tell their future children that truth about doctrine is not important? Young Ted, bless his heart, researched the Scriptures and focused on Jesus’ prayer the night he was betrayed in John 17:20-23.”

My prayer is not for them alone. I pray also for those who will believe in me through their message, that all of them may be one, Father, just as you are in me and I am in you. May they also be in us so that the world may believe that you have sent me. I have given them the glory that you gave me, that they may be one as we are one—I in them and you in me—so that they may be brought to complete unity. Then the world will know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me. NIV

(Charles read the Scripture on the screen then continued.)

“Ladies and gentlemen, once I heard the convictions of this young man and reconsidered the main message of our Lord in this prayer, I was convicted that religious division is wrong and that I should put forth my best efforts
to end it at least between my church and Fred’s church. After seeing this, I was amazed at how hard my heart had become. I had met with ministers of other churches for years in monthly meetings and none of us ever once discussed the divisions between us. That has changed now. I’m here with Fred to discuss the differences between us with a view to find the real truth about what divides us and to be brought, in Jesus’ words, to “complete unity.” I’m going into this debate, I prefer the word discussion, not with a view that I have all the truth and Fred is all wrong, but with a sincere and earnest desire to learn from Fred and he from me. What is important here is truth. I want to know all the truth about what divides us. I urge all of you to do the same.

As of now, I sincerely believe that Salvation, the new birth, is by faith alone. By “alone” I mean faith by itself without any help from me by my good works. Believing that, I will put forth my best efforts to defend it, but, at the same time, I will honestly consider everything Fred has to say.

I’m taking for my text the familiar Scripture:

( PowerPoint)

John 3:16: ‘For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.’ NIV

First, let me explain the difference between the words “faith” and “believe.” Faith is a noun and believe is a verb and that’s it. If I say, “I believe in Jesus,” and then say, “I have faith in Jesus,” I have just repeated myself. These words are translated from two Greek words, pisteuo and pistis. You
see, in Greek, they are cognates. It would be exactly like our two English words, believe and belief with belief being the noun form of the word and believe being the verb form. In fact our translators might have done better had they translated them so. Now, allow me to read again John 3:16:

*For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.*

John 3:16 is a promise from God and honestly, ladies and gentlemen, I don’t see how Fred can refute this. What is the requirement for eternal life? This verse states that one must believe or have faith. Whose words are these in John 3:16? They are the words of Jesus himself recorded for us through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit through the pen of the apostle John.

“It appears to me that my point has been proved beyond any reasonable doubt, but to show how consistent the Bible is within itself when one finds the truth, I will introduce some other Scriptures and arguments.

“Paul and Silas were in prison in the city of Philippi, Acts 16.

(Note: no titles for Paul and Silas, the Bible didn’t say, ‘The Right Reverend Silas and his holiness the most exalted Father Paul,’ no! just ‘Paul and Silas.’) I discussed this with Fred Clark before the debate began and shared with him my convictions about unbiblical titles and, to his credit, Fred was open to the idea I suggested and we agreed to drop all titles, not just for this debate, but for the future and he agreed.)

“Back to my topic, it was midnight and Paul and Silas were in stocks after having been beaten. They were singing and the other prisoners heard them. Suddenly there was an earthquake and all the prison doors were opened.
and the jailer was about to kill himself when Paul called out ‘do yourself no harm.’ None of the prisoners had escaped. Now, read with me from Acts 16:30-31

POWERPOINT: (Charles read the screen)

He (the Jailer) then brought them (Paul and Silas) out and asked, “Sirs, what must I do to be saved?” They replied, “Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household.”

“Does that sound like total agreement with Jesus’ own doctrine in John 3:16? Help me out Paul? What must I do to be saved? ‘Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household.’ Believe and what else? Nothing, believe only and what will happen? You'll be saved and, oh, by the way, your household too will be saved! It will be interesting to see what my dear friend Fred does with this verse. Will he dare to add to it? Does he know that God forbids any of us to add anything to his word, the Bible?”

“It appears to me that my proposition has been totally proved by these two scriptures, but, I shall continue. I will read from:

Romans 5:1 Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,
“What does faith do for you here? It justifies you! ‘Justified’ in the Greek means ‘just as if you had never sinned!’ Again, just as in John 3:16 and in Acts 16:30-31, one is justified, saved by faith only! And what a salvation! Once you come to God through faith, God sees you, not like an ex convict who did the crime and served his time, but as if you had never committed the crime (sins) in the first place.”

“I have just one more scripture to set before you:

Ephesians 2:8-9 *For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God— not by works, so that no one can boast.*

Just in case some in the audience are thinking about baptism, in my opinion, this verse settles that. Salvation is not from yourselves, there is nothing you can do except to believe or have faith. That’s it! Jesus did all the work for us when he died on the cross. Notice the words, ‘not by works,’ that is, not by any works you can do. Jesus did all the work when he died on the cross. Salvation is a free gift. All we have to do is to accept it. Notice the words, ‘not by works so that no one can boast.’ If one had to be baptized to be saved, that would be a work and would contradict the plain teaching of this Scripture. If I did anything beyond believe, I could then boast. I have nothing to boast about because Jesus did it all.”

“I rest my case. Now, let’s hear from my friend Fred Clark.”
There was polite applause from the audience for Charles which was a bit more enthusiastic from the members of Charles Hoffmiester's church. Lisa’s parents were obviously pleased with their minister's performance. Her father was thinking that this debate might not have been a bad idea after all. They couldn’t imagine how this “hick” preacher with no knowledge of Greek or Hebrew could overcome such brilliant logic as that just presented by their minister, though they were a bit disgruntled that he stopped wearing his robe and dropped the title of “Reverend,” and convinced the other minister to do the same.

The moderator then came to the podium and announced that Fred Clark would now speak in rebuttal and that he would be given 20 minutes.

Fred Clark came to the podium and began his speech:

“Ladies and Gentlemen, thank you for coming tonight and I want to thank my worthy opponent, Charles Hoffmiester, and his congregation for helping make this debate possible and I want to thank my elders and my own congregation for their support of this endeavor. I want to honestly and fully respond to all of Charles’ points here tonight. Charles fully explained the purpose of the discussion here tonight and the role Ted Flynn played in our coming together. My prayer is that we accomplish exactly what Jesus and Ted desire from this discussion. Just a note, after my good friend Charles Hoffmeister shared with me his convictions about
the use of unbiblical titles, I studied it out in the Bible and came to the firm conviction that he was right. From here on I will use no titles with my name. I am Fred, and I request that even people in my own congregation stop calling me ‘Reverend Fred.’ I don’t mean any disrespect to other ministers who are here tonight who do use titles. After all, I used them myself for years. I honor those who give their lives to preaching the gospel. How beautiful are their feet!”

“Ladies and Gentlemen I did not come here tonight to argue but to seek truth, love and unity. I appreciate Charles’ scholarship and I came here tonight to learn all I can from him. He has much more education than I have and I am convinced that I can learn from him. I have not studied Greek as Charles has and I did not know until I heard Charles tonight that the word justified in Romans 5:1 in the Greek means ‘just as if I’d never sinned!’ What a wonderful concept! God sees the born again Christian as if he or she had never sinned! I thank you sir for that information. I shall never forget that. I feel that I am at the feet of a knowledgeable teacher from whom I can learn much. Thank you, Charles.”

Charles Hoffmiester relaxed and the worried look on his face was replaced with a broad smile.

Fred Clark continued, “I also want to thank Charles for the explanation of the words “believe” and “faith” and the Greek words from which they have been translated and that the only difference is that the
word faith is a noun and that the word believe is a verb. Again, thank you Charles.”

“My efforts here tonight are not directed at winning or embarrassing my opponent but to urge all of us to take a new, fresh look at what it takes to arrive at the full truth about the new birth. Please allow me some time to lay the foundation for what I believe to be the truth about the new birth. I’d like to begin with the first temptation the Devil offered Jesus after his 40 day fast. Powerpoint (Fred read the screen)

Matthew 4: 3-4 The tempter came to him and said, “If you are the Son of God, tell these stones to become bread.” Jesus answered, “It is written: ‘Man does not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.’” NIV

“Folks, I believe that in this Scripture Jesus laid down an important principle for all time in the search for the whole truth. He didn't say that man would live by one verse from the Bible or on a few or even many verses from the Bible, but man would live on “every word” that comes from the mouth of God. This verse seems to be at the very heart of the following poem:

**Six Blind Men & the Elephant**

from John Godfrey Saxe (1816-1887)

It was six men of Indostan  
To learning much inclined,  
Who went to see the Elephant
(Though all of them were blind),
That each by observation
Might satisfy his mind.

The First approached the Elephant,
And happening to fall
Against his broad and sturdy side,
At once began to bawl:
"God bless me! but the Elephant
Is very like a wall!"

The Second, feeling of the tusk
Cried, "Ho! what have we here,
So very round and smooth and sharp?
To me 'tis mighty clear
This wonder of an Elephant
Is very like a spear!"

The Third approached the animal,
And happening to take
The squirming trunk within his hands,
Thus boldly up he spake:
"I see," quoth he, "the Elephant
Is very like a snake!"

The Fourth reached out an eager hand,
And felt about the knee:
"What most this wondrous beast is like
Is mighty plain," quoth he;
"'Tis clear enough the Elephant
Is very like a tree!"

The Fifth, who chanced to touch the ear,
Said: "E'en the blindest man
Can tell what this resembles most;
Deny the fact who can,
This marvel of an Elephant
Is very like a fan!"

The Sixth no sooner had begun
About the beast to grope,
Than, seizing on the swinging tail
That fell within his scope.
"I see," quoth he, "the Elephant
Is very like a rope!"
And so these men of Indostan
Disputed loud and long,
Each in his own opinion
Exceeding stiff and strong,
Though each was partly in the right,
And all were in the wrong!

Moral:

So oft in theologic wars,
The disputants, I ween,
Rail on in utter ignorance
Of what each other mean,
And prate about an Elephant
Not one of them has seen.

“To paraphrase, the first blind man fell against the side of the elephant and went away convinced that the elephant was like a wall. The second felt the tusk, went away convinced that the elephant was like a spear and so forth until the sixth seizing the swinging tail went back and argued strongly, with conviction, that this marvel of an elephant was like a rope only, and not like a wall, a spear, etc. The others were doing the same with their limited knowledge. How much better if they had listened to each other and had shared knowledge with each other then all would have had a better and more accurate knowledge of what an elephant is really like? Or, better still, instead of only making a shallow inquiry, examining only a tiny part of the elephant, and leaving as though one had all truth, why not make more diligent inquiry to learn all that is available? To make it practical, why not walk all around the elephant; why not read and consider the entire Bible instead of only a few verses? To make a gentle, but important point, who would want us to draw spiritual
conclusions dealing with the new birth and eternity when we have examined only a few of the Bible verses which speak to this most important subject? Then, to make it worse, insist that no other verses need to be considered on this topic in our search for truth, not unlike the blind man who only felt the tail of the elephant and declared emphatically that the elephant was like a rope and not like a spear! As we all know, this blind man needed to examine the other end of the elephant. I suggest that this would be exactly what Satan desires of us. The more of the light of God’s word we shine on any topic in our search for truth, the more Satan hates it."

“So, let us consider all that God has to say in His Bible on the topic of salvation—the new birth. That’s what I propose for us here tonight. Charles has one concept and I have another. Perhaps he is like the man who felt the tusk and was convinced that the elephant was like a spear and perhaps I am like the man who examined the tail and was thoroughly committed to the rope idea. Let us in the spirit of the love of the truth join our knowledge together and learn from each other. Brother Charles has found verses which definitely state in undeniable terms that faith is essential to salvation. No one can be saved without faith and I concede that point to my brother right here tonight. Later, I do want to consider more in depth the Bible meaning of saving faith and the Bible meaning of works as used in Ephesians 2:8-9.”
This new approach of searching for the whole truth with an honorable fellow minister rather than fighting it out with arguments seemed to appeal to Charles.

Clark continued, “I believe that God has led me to lay out the following information tonight. At the same time, I am not infallible and don’t claim to know all the truth of the Bible. I may make some mistakes tonight and if I do, I pray that God will inspire Charles to correct me in the spirit of love, which I am confident he will do.”

“I can see how my friend, Charles, came to the conclusions he did from the verses he cited in his presentation. In each Scripture he cited, the Scripture did certainly attribute salvation to faith and in those specific places, and no other condition is stated in those specific Scriptures. Many scholarly and sincere men have come to the same conclusion as did Charles regarding this question. I, therefore, humbly proceed to raise a question. If one reads through the New Testament, one will find at least fifteen things which God says saves us. Here is that list with the pertinent Scriptures: (Fred Clark had prepared a large chart written on white cloth and attached to the back wall. When he pulled the ties, the cloth unrolled and revealed the following:)

---

1. Matthew 16:16
2. Mark 16:15
3. Acts 1:8
4. Romans 10:9
5. Ephesians 4:17
6. Philippians 1:1
7. Colossians 1:23
8. 1 Peter 1:1
9. 1 John 3:9
10. 1 John 4:16
11. 1 John 5:11
12. Hebrews 4:15
13. 1 Corinthians 15:57
14. 1 Timothy 4:8
15. Hebrews 11:6

---
HERE IS A LIST OF 15 THINGS WHICH GOD SAYS SAVES US:

1. JESUS' BLOOD--- Romans 5:9
2. GRACE--- Ephesians 2:8-9
3. HOPE---Romans 8:24
4. CONFESSION---Romans 10:10
5. DEEDS---James 2:24
7. GOD'S LOVE—John 3:16
8. CALLING ON THE NAME OF THE LORD--- Acts 2:21
9. MESSAGE (Peter's sermon)---Acts 11:14
10. HOLDING FIRMLY TO THE WORD---I Corinthians 15:2
11. LOVING THE TRUTH---II Thessalonians 2:10
12. BAPTISM I Peter 3:21
13. SANCTIFYING WORK OF THE SPIRIT---II Thessalonians 2:13
14. OBEDIENCE TO THE GOSPEL II Thessalonians 1:8-9
15. AND, O YES, FAITH Hebrews 11:6

(NOT INTENDED AS A COMPLETE LIST. THERE COULD BE OTHER ITEMS)

(Fred Clark read through the list above with the Scriptures which indeed did say that all those 15 items save. Then Fred continued his speech. If you, the reader, are interested, you might read all fifteen Scriptures above and see if you agree with Fred.)

Fred turned on his projector with PowerPoint:

“Neither Charles nor I believe that the Bible contradicts itself. That being true, how do we explain the fact that in the Bible God says that we are saved by faith, Romans 5:1, for example without mentioning anything else, and says we are saved by baptism in I Peter 3:21, without mentioning faith or anything else besides baptism in that passage? (Fred Read the screen)
TWO DIFFERENT WAYS TO INTERPRET THE BIBLE:

#1. "ALL THE TRUTH IS IN THIS ONE VERSE" APPROACH OR

1 Peter 3:21 and this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also—not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a good conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ, ---(hence we’re saved by baptism only)

VS.

Romans 5:1 Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, --- (hence we’re saved by faith only)

#2. NOT ALL TRUTH IS IN EACH VERSE—-BOTH VERSES ARE TRUE, ONE IS SAVED BY FAITH AND BAPTISM

If one chooses either of these Scriptures over the other, he is essentially throwing out the other from consideration. And he is using method #1 above—all truth is in this one verse approach. On the other hand, if he chooses to say both verses are true and that one is saved by both faith and baptism, he has selected method #2 as I do. I believe that one is saved by both faith and baptism.

Please allow me to make a point by being absurd. Suppose I were to read 1 Peter 3:21 and assert strongly and with powerful emphasis that according to the Bible in this verse, one is saved by baptism and, since
nothing else besides baptism is mentioned in this verse, not even faith, one is saved by baptism only.? (I do not believe that and would never teach it.) While those who believe in salvation by faith only, find a verse such as Romans 5:1 and argue that one is saved by faith only because no other requirement is mentioned in Romans 5:1. Which argument is more absurd? Would you not agree that both are equally absurd?

“Do we follow the lead of the six blind men and argue that the elephant is like a rope; no, it is like a spear; no, a fan; no, a tree etc.? Or, could we say the elephant is like a spear and like a rope? Could we not say that, yes, we are saved by faith and, yes, we are saved by repentance, baptism, confession and everything else God says we are saved by, including the list of fifteen items on the cloth chart? Could we not say that we are saved or that we live by every word that comes from the mouth of God? Remember Jesus’ words in Matthew 4:4 (PowerPoint):

Matthew 4:4 ‘... Man does not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.’

If we say, yes, faith is necessary, but repentance, baptism, etc., (the rest of the 15 items) are not necessary, are we not contradicting Jesus? How can one say that repentance has nothing to do with being saved when Jesus himself said unless you repent you too will all perish, Luke 13:3, 5.”
At this point Robert Bergman, Lisa’s dad, stood up and started yelling at both ministers. “Mr. Hoffmiester, why are you not saying something to stop this nonsense? Mr. Clark, what about Paul’s statement, not of works? You, Sir, are perverting the Scriptures to make salvation a thing of works!”

The police chief was made his way to Robert Bergman to escort him out when Fred intervened.

“Please, allow Mr. Bergman to stay. He is raising an important question and I want to respond to him. Please allow me to put forth the following Scriptures as a source of much misunderstanding and division in the religious world by many sincere and godly people, Ephesians 2:8-9 which my friend Charles used: (Fred opened the following Scriptures on his projector)

**Ephesians 2:8-9** *For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one may boast.* NASB

And one each from James and Jesus:

**James 2:24** *You see that a man is justified by works and not by faith alone.* NASB

**Matthew 25:31-46** *But when the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the angels with Him, then He will sit on His glorious throne. *All the nations will be gathered before Him; and He will separate them from one
another, as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats; and He will put the sheep on His right, and the goats on the left.

"Then the King will say to those on His right, 'Come, you who are blessed of My Father,) inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

'For I was hungry, and you gave Me something to eat; I was thirsty, and you gave Me something to drink; I was a stranger, and you invited Me in;
naked, and you clothed Me; I was sick, and you visited Me; I was in prison, and you came to Me.' ...

"Then He will also say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;

for I was hungry, and you gave Me nothing to eat; I was thirsty, and you gave Me nothing to drink;

I was a stranger, and you did not invite Me in; naked, and you did not clothe Me; sick, and in prison, and you did not visit Me.'

"Then they themselves also will answer, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not take care of You?' (continued next page)

"Then He will answer them, 'Truly I say to you, to the extent that you did not do it to one of the least of these, you did not do it to Me.' "These will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life." NASB
“One way to read and interpret Ephesians 2:8-9 has been explained very effectively by Charles. One is saved by faith alone without works of any kind. If that is so, how does one explain James 2:24 above that a man is justified by works and not by faith alone? Then consider the great judgment day scene described by none less than Jesus himself. Why were the sheep invited into heaven? Because, as Jesus explained, they fed the hungry, visited the sick and did other works of compassion. And why were the goats sent to hell? Because, as Jesus again explained, they failed to feed the hungry, visit the sick and do other works of compassion. To use Jesus' own words,

“Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me nothing to drink,....”

Where are these people going? To the eternal fire. Why? “you gave me nothing to eat.”

Jesus explained to both groups that a failure to help fellow humans was the same as refusing compassion to him. Some of those who hold to the faith only position try to explain Matthew 25: 31-46 away by saying this applied to nations, not individuals. I beg to differ with them on this. “Nations” don’t visit the sick, individual people do. Can you imagine a
hospital scene where the nurse comes into the room of a sick person and says, ‘The nations of Germany and France are here to see you.’ The obvious meaning is, if one is compassionate and feeds the poor, visits the sick, he will please Jesus and will be invited into heaven and if one does not, he or she will be sent to eternal torment in hell. How does this square with Paul’s statement in Ephesians 2: 8-9 that salvation is not by works?”

“What is the truth? Are Jesus and James wrong and is Paul right? Or, is Paul wrong while Jesus and James are right? Or is there a way to understand these verses so that there is absolute perfect harmony between all these verses?

“I will now give you an explanation that makes perfect harmony between all these Scriptures without distorting or twisting them in any way. It will be a natural understanding which, I believe, truth lovers appreciate.

“First, allow a closer look at Ephesians 2: 8-9: (Powerpoint)

Ephesians 2:8-9  For by grace you **have been saved** through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one may boast. NASB

Notice the underlined words “**have been saved.**” Was the inspired writer speaking of salvation in past or future tense? The answer is past tense, of
course. Paul was speaking of the time when these Ephesians disciples were born again. The word “saved” is used in both past tense and future tense in the Bible. I will now give you an example of salvation in the future tense:

(powerpoint)

I Timothy 4: 16 Watch your life and doctrine closely. Persevere in them, because if you do, **you will save** both yourself and your hearers. NIV

“Notice the underlined words **you will save**. Paul obviously was not speaking to Timothy about his being born again because Timothy had already been born again. After all, he was an evangelist appointing elders in churches. Paul was saying to the young evangelist Timothy, watch your life, don’t be an adulterer or a thief and watch your doctrine, preach the truth, not false doctrine. Persevere in these things because, if you do, you **will save,**” future tense, yourself and your hearers. Paul was speaking to Timothy about salvation in the future tense as we saw in Matthew 25 above, the great judgment day scene when Jesus invites Timothy and others into heaven. So, to summarize, when Paul spoke to the Ephesians, he spoke of the time they were born again, **‘have been saved.’** When the same writer, Paul, wrote to Timothy and what Timothy must do to save himself, he was speaking of the future great judgment day when Jesus invites the saved into heaven. That’s why Paul said the Timothy, **‘you will save** both yourself and your hearers’”
It is clear in Ephesians 2:8-9 that Paul is not speaking at all about the future salvation that he spoke to Timothy about in I Timothy 4:16. The second or future salvation when the faithful disciples are invited into heaven is one for which we must do something. In Timothy’s case, Paul instructed him to watch his life and doctrine and to persevere in them in order to save himself and his hearers. With Jesus, in Matthew 25:31-46, we must feed the hungry and do other works of compassion. If we don’t, Jesus will send us to eternal punishment.

Again, in Ephesians 2:8-9, Paul wrote, “you have been saved.” A different salvation from the one the same inspired apostle wrote about in I Timothy 4:16. This first salvation of new birth is by grace through faith. Jesus did all the work.

“Now, that the tense is clear, we can say that at the point one is born again, he or she has done absolutely nothing to earn that. Jesus paid the full price when he died on the cross to take all the punishment for all our sins. Once one is born again and has all his or past sins forgiven, has his name written in heaven in the Book of Life and God sees him as if he’d never sinned, then, out of gratitude this person should be more than willing to spend the remainder of his life serving Jesus and bearing much fruit for the glory of God. If he does, wonderful, on Judgment Day he will hear these words: (Powerpoint)
‘Come, you who are blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.’

If he does not feed the poor, visit the sick, etc., he will hear the words,

“Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels.”

Now, that we have established that the salvation Paul in Ephesians 2:8-9 was speaking about was the new birth, past tense, and not the future salvation at Judgment Day. The “not of works” in Ephesians 2 could not have applied to the future salvation explained by Paul in I Timothy 4:16 because Paul specifically stated here in Ephesians 2, ‘you have been saved.’ They already had this salvation and Jesus did all the work.

At this point the moderator called time on Fred and Fred took his seat. Charles went to the microphone and said, “Friends, this is not a normal debate. Fred and I are here seeking truth and unity. I sense that Fred is in the middle of an interesting view of the Bible and I would like to hear him out before I respond. I yield time for Fred to complete his response then I will respond.”

With that Charles sat down and Fred came back to the podium. (The Bergmans were totally upset with their minister over this move and glared at him with intense hatred.)
“Charles, thank you from the bottom of my heart. You are right. I was in the middle of my explanation when my time ran out. I think you have a heart of love for the truth which you have demonstrated again here tonight. My prayer is that I can imitate your love.

Now, let us examine the word **works** as used in Ephesians 2:8-9. See the Scripture again:

```plaintext
Ephesians 2:8-9  For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of **works**, so that no one may boast. NASB
```

“See the underlined word **works**. Putting on our first century glasses will help us understand this word as Paul meant it instead of trying to see it through 2,000 years of man-made traditions. I’m saying that Paul was opposing those Pharisee believers who were following Paul all over the New Testament world teaching the false doctrine that the Gentile believers had to get circumcised and keep the Law of Moses in order to be saved.

(Powerpoint)

```plaintext
Acts 15:1  Some men came down from Judea to Antioch and were teaching the brothers: "Unless you are circumcised, according to the custom taught by Moses, you cannot be saved."

Acts 15:5  Then some of the believers who belonged to the party of the Pharisees stood up and said, "The Gentiles must be circumcised and required to obey the law of Moses."
```
“If I am right, Paul was referring to the works of the Law of Moses. See how many times the same writer, Paul, uses “works of the law” in this verse:

Galatians 2:16 nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the Law but through faith in Christ Jesus, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the Law: since by the works of the Law no flesh will be justified. NASB

If I am right, Paul was telling these Ephesian Christians that salvation, the new birth, was not by works of the Law. They did not have to get circumcised and obey the Law of Moses in order to be born again. That was exactly what the Pharisee believers were teaching.

(Side note, the New International Version translates the word works in Galatians 2:16 above as “observing” even though it is the same Greek word, ergon, used here is used in Ephesians 2: 9 where the NIV folks translate it “works.” I have eleven other translations of the Bible in my library and every one of them translates ergon as works in both places. Why did the NIV folks translate the same word differently? Perhaps it was a theological interpretation, I don’t know. Maybe they didn’t want us to see that Paul meant works of the law in Ephesians 2:9.)

“Again, if I am right, the context should provide additional support to this understanding and it does. Look at the verse again and the newly underlined words: (Powerpoint)
Ephesians 2:8-9  For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one may boast. NASB

“These underlined words, so that no one may boast, give us another important clue to understanding works. (Powerpoint)

Galatians 6:13  For those who are circumcised do not even keep the Law themselves, but they desire to have you circumcised so that they may boast in your flesh.

“Now allow me to put the two verses together to help everyone to see it:

(Powerpoint)

Ephesians 2:8-9  For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one may boast. NASB

Galatians 6:13  For those who are circumcised do not even keep the Law themselves, but they desire to have you circumcised so that they may boast in your flesh. NASB

“Do you see boast in both Scriptures and do you see it connected to circumcision in the second one? Is it possible that Paul was referring to the same thing, circumcision, in Ephesians 2:9? Contrary to the teaching of some, if Paul’s interpretation of works here was getting circumcised and keeping the Law of Moses, then he was not referring to baptism,
repentance, confession or any of these New Testament commands in his meaning of works. In other words, to answer Mr. Bergman’s question Ephesians 2:8-9 does not exclude baptism as a part of the new birth.

On the other hand, if one takes the interpretation that Paul was speaking of future salvation in Ephesians 2:8-9 and by works Paul meant any kind of works like feeding the poor, visiting the sick and other works of compassion and sharing the good news, then one would have Paul in direct contradiction to Jesus in Matthew 25:31-46 where Jesus clearly taught that these kind of works weigh heavily in our eternal destiny whether it be heaven or hell.”

Some who teach that this doctrine of salvation by faith only say that if you think you have to do anything beyond believing, you have just nullified grace. This contradicts the main messages in many if not most of Jesus’ parables. Let’s take a few to illustrate:

Luke 13:6-9 Then he told this parable: "A man had a fig tree, planted in his vineyard, and he went to look for fruit on it, but did not find any. So he said to the man who took care of the vineyard, 'For three years now I've been coming to look for fruit on this fig tree and haven't found any. Cut it down! Why should it use up the soil?'

" 'Sir,' the man replied, 'leave it alone for one more year, and I'll dig around it and fertilize it. If it bears fruit next year, fine! If not, then cut it down.' "
“Do you think that Jesus gave this parable to apply to humans or was he just teaching husbandry? I believe that Jesus would have us apply this to ourselves as his servants. He’ll give us some time, but, eventually, he expects us to bear fruit or be cut down. This message from our Lord is not compatible with the theology that the second salvation is by grace through faith only and that there is absolutely nothing you can do to ‘earn’ it. Again, the first salvation, the new birth was paid for by Jesus in full when he took all the punishment for all our sins on the cross. The second or future salvation is conditional as was seen in Timothy’s case. He had to watch his life and doctrine in order to save himself and his hearers. Not only watch them, he must persevere in them in order to save himself and his hearers. This is in total harmony with Jesus’ teaching in the Great Judgment Day scene in Matthew 25.

“Staying with fruit, let us take another parable:

John 15: 1-2, 5-6 "I am the true vine, and my Father is the gardener. He cuts off every branch in me that bears no fruit, while every branch that does bear fruit he prunes so that it will be even more fruitful.

5"I am the vine; you are the branches. If a man remains in me and I in him, he will bear much fruit; apart from me you can do nothing. If anyone does not remain in me, he is like a branch that is thrown away and withers; such branches are picked up, thrown into the fire and burned."
“The gardener is the Father, Jesus is the vine and Christians are the branches. When do the branches get attached to the vine? When one is born again he is, at that point, attached to the vine. What is the main point of the parable? Branches, Christians, must bear fruit. If they don’t, they will be cut off, picked up and burned. It sounds like Jesus expects us to do something once we are born again.”

“Another example, consider the parable of the talents, Matthew 25: 14-30. Before going on a long journey, the master entrusted one man with five talents, another with two talents and a third with one talent, each according to his ability. The five talent man gained five more, the two talent man gained two more and the one talent man dug a hole and hid his master's talent and gained nothing. The master rewarded the first two men, but was most unhappy with the third man. Read what happened:

Matthew 25: 26-30  "His master replied, 'You wicked, lazy servant! So you knew that I harvest where I have not sown and gather where I have not scattered seed? Well then, you should have put my money on deposit with the bankers, so that when I returned I would have received it back with interest.

" 'Take the talent from him and give it to the one who has the ten talents. For everyone who has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him. And throw that worthless servant outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'"
“Do you see three adjectives describing the one talent man? They are ‘wicked,’ ‘lazy,’ and ‘worthless.’ Again, as with most of Jesus’ parables, he teaches us to be active and productive or face severe consequences. What happened to this lazy, wicked and worthless disciple? Whatever he has will be taken from him and he will thrown into the darkness where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. That sounds like hell to me.”

“We could make the same point with the Parable of the Ten Virgins, the parable of the Sower, the Parable of the Mustard Seed, and the Parable of the Yeast and so on.”

“Can any of you in the auditorium tonight think of any of Jesus’ parables which teach the opposite, that one is saved in the future tense by just believing without any works? If so, come on up and explain.”

Fred waited about thirty seconds and no one volunteered to answer.

“Well, if there was one Parable that taught that, with all the Bible scholars in this audience, I would think that someone would come up with it. Hearing no one on that challenge, I feel confident that the parables are lined up on the ‘get busy and work for Jesus in order to go to heaven and avoid hell’ side of the issue.”

“If we take the position that salvation in Ephesians 2:8-9 means going to heaven and that works means feeding the poor and bearing fruit,
then Paul and Jesus would be in direct contradiction to each other. If, on the other hand, we understand salvation in Ephesians 2: 8-9 to be the new birth, after all Paul did say “have been saved,” past tense and works in verse 9 to refer to getting circumcised and keeping the Law of Moses, then we have perfect harmony with all these Scriptures.

So far, I have quoted Ephesians 2: 8-9 without going on to verse ten. I will do that now: (Powerpoint)

Ephesians 2:8-10 For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. For we are God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do

After Fred read all three verses, he said, “See the underlined word created? When were these Ephesian Christians “created” in Christ Jesus? They were created when they were born again, of course. That further backs up our interpretation of saved in verse 8 that “saved” past tense referred to their new birth. One does not do good works to get born again, but, once born again, God expects all of us to do the good works he describes in verse 10. That would be the kind Jesus taught in the Judgment Day scene and in the Parable of the Vine and the Branches and every other parable I have mentioned. To make the point abundantly clear, “works” in Ephesians 2:9 means works of the Law of Moses like getting circumcised while works in
Ephesians 2:10 refers to good works like evangelism, feeding the hungry, visiting the sick, works of compassion God expects of all Christians."

“My friends who teach that there is absolutely nothing one can do besides believe to be saved, have you considered the Lord’s Prayer? Not only did Jesus teach that we must do something more than believe like the demons, in his parables, in much of his other teaching we see the same theme. Take for example, the Lord’s Prayer, Matthew 6:12: (Powerpoint)

**Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.**

What do you think? Must one forgive to be forgiven? What is one asking God in this part of the prayer? Forgive us how? ‘AS we have forgiven,’ what if we really are still holding on to a grudge? Notice what Jesus emphasized in the very next verse when he finished giving us this prayer:

**Matthew 6: 14-15 For if you forgive men when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins.**

“If Jesus had wanted to make a stronger case for the absolute necessity of our forgiving others in order to be forgiven ourselves, how could he have said it to make it stronger than it is? I can’t think of any way, can you? I am now ready to listen to my friend Charles Hoffmiester with an open heart and I hope you are too.” The crowd gave Fred a hearty applause.
Fred sat down and after the moderator made his remarks, Charles came to the podium and began.

“Ladies and Gentlemen, my worthy opponent, Fred, and my fellow ministers, I am here tonight in a search for the truth on how to be saved. I am not interested in who is right, but, what is right. I am not interested in putting up a fight and winning. In all of my seven years of training in the theological seminary, I have never heard the explanation Fred gave us here tonight of how the word ‘works’ as it is used in Ephesians 2: 8-9 meant getting circumcised and keeping the Law of Moses. Up until tonight, I never even thought about the past tense in Ephesians 2: 8 where Paul stated ‘you have been saved,’ referring solely to the new birth and not to the second salvation Fred spoke about in I Timothy 4:16 in which Paul instructed Timothy that by watching his life and doctrine he might save himself and his hearers. I have quoted Ephesians 2:8-9 hundreds of times in sermons without ever noticing the past tense of saved or questioning the definition of works until Fred opened it up for me tonight.”

“Matthew 25:31-46 has always bothered me because it looked to me like it contradicted Paul's message in Ephesians 2:8-9. Jesus made it plain in Matthew 25 that the compassionate people were invited into heaven because they fed the hungry, visited the sick and such like. Jesus also made it very plain that the uncompassionate ones on the left were sent to hell because they did not feed the hungry and visit the sick. Now, on
reflection, how could I have placed Paul and my interpretation of his words in Ephesians 2:8-10 above those clear words of Jesus in Matthew 25:31-46? Fred’s use of Matthew 4:4, that man lives by every word that comes from the mouth of God and not just a few verses coupled with his six blind men illustration makes me, in my own mind right now, look like the blind man who held the tail and declared that the elephant was like a rope only and not like a spear and so forth. Then, to cape it off, here behind me hangs Fred’s listing of fifteen things by which God says we are saved. If I continue to say that we are saved by faith only, I would in effect be denying what God has said in the other fourteen Scriptures. I would in effect find myself contradicting God!

At this point loud boos came from some of Hoffmiester’s church members and especially from Robert Bergman.

“I understand that my own people are upset with me and I am very sorry that I have not made a better defense, however, I have to be honest with you and be open to truth. What Fred has taught me here tonight makes perfect sense to me, however, this is so new I need more time in prayer, fasting and study to make sure that I am not missing something.

“In addition, I plan to call in my bishop and fellow ministers to see if they can help me defend what I’ve sincerely believed to be the truth up until tonight.
It may be that Fred is wrong, and, if he is, I want time later to set the record straight. It may be that Fred is right, and, if so, I want to support him in that. Nevertheless, I will not attempt to answer him tonight. Tomorrow night, I will share with you what I think. I know that I have not used all my time and I yield what is left to Fred.

With this comment, several from Charles' church, including Robert and Jesse Bergman stomped out of the meeting.

Fred came back to the podium and continued:

"Charles, you are truly a generous and kind man. I suggest that we continue this topic tomorrow night after you have had more time to prepare and shed whatever light God gives you on the subject of the new birth.

Charles agreed. The moderator came to the podium, reminded the audience to submit questions, then said a prayer and dismissed the audience.

Chapter 28

EMERGENCY MEETING IN THE ROMAN SEWER

Lieabulus and his committee, because they were charged with distorting the truth about the new birth, were closely watching the debate. When Lieabulus
saw the way the debate was going, he thought it was serious enough to notify
Satan and call in extra resources. Satan then called an emergency meeting of all
the leading demons from all over the world to try to stop what was happening in
Lexington, Kentucky. The demons came in grumbling about being called away
from important work to a useless meeting. Satan called the demons to order, not
an easy task. He had to use physical force with his guards to bring some of the
more unruly members to order.

“Fellow demons, Lieabulus has brought to my attention a most
unusual threat from a small town in Kentucky in the United States.
Lieabulus, come to the podium and explain the problem.”

Lieabulus came to the podium and explained the seriousness of the situation.

“We have been very effective in distorting the truth about the new
birth for centuries. Remember our goal—give people a pseudo new birth
and they will think they are saved when they are not. They will still belong
to our Father, the Devil. We first started with the idea of original sin, our
term, not God’s term. We persuaded many to believe that unbaptized little
children would be forever doomed if they died in infancy without baptism.
After that, we were able not only to distort the purpose of baptism, but
its form as well—sprinkling instead of immersion. We helped Empticus and
his committee a great deal with this perversion. Men who were able to
think for themselves began to ask what kind of God would doom tiny infants to damnation forever because their ancestor, Adam, did something they didn’t know about and over which they had no power. This led many to atheism. You can thank us later, Empticus.” (Hisses and howls arose from Empticus’ area of the sewer.) Empticus stood up and yelled from his place in the sewer, “Lieabulus, you and your lazy crew deserve no thanks from us. We make more atheist in a month than you make in a thousand years. We’ve taken God and the Bible out of public education in the western world, and Darwinicus can thank us later, we replaced God and the Bible with Charles Darwin and evolution.” (A bloody, violent fight with cursing and swearing broke out between the three committees. Again, Satan had to bring in his guards to regain order. Then Lieabulus continued.)

“As you know, Jesus and the Apostles practiced baptism by immersion. We thereafter persuaded church leaders to replace baptism by immersion with pouring and later sprinkling. As you know, God wanted sinners to re-enact the death, burial and resurrection of his Son in baptism. God’s plan was that when the sinner repented, died to his sin, it was like the death of Jesus on the cross. Then when the sinner was immersed in water, it was like the burial of Jesus. Then when the newly born sinner was raised up out of the tomb of water it was like the
resurrection of Jesus. Thus, in baptism, the sinner is directly connected with the atonement of Jesus. By changing the immersion to pouring and sprinkling, we destroyed all of that. Some of you were hostile to our idea of changing the form of baptism from immersion to sprinkling or pouring arguing that the word baptism itself meant immersion, but you were wrong. Many of the churches now have switched over completely and either pour or sprinkle.

Now I fear that this debate will erase all our work which we have successfully carried on for centuries. I seriously fear that the truth, that ugly word, will prevail in this debate in Lexington, Kentucky. I call on all of you for your help in this. I especially call on Pornapolis and his crew to attack both ministers from his vantage point. If he can trap one or both these ministers in sexual sin, that will become the public focus and we all may escape a dangerous situation here. People will forget all about the truth, ug, and remember the scandal. He has been very successful with clergy so far, I'll give him that.”

(Pornapolis was beaming and his demons were cheering.)
Satan interrupted, “Too much love, ug, and devotion here between Pornapolis and Lieabulus. Remember our core values—hate, revenge, and envy. How dare you, Lieabulus, to praise another demon besides me.

On the other hand, I do see your point and will assign Pornapolis and his crew to assist with the ministers, although, I don’t foresee much success with Fred Clark. Remember, he just came off a forty day fast. I wouldn’t waste too much time with him. You might have more success with Charles Hoffmiester. His wife has female problems and has not been intimate with him for some time. Also, give more attention to young Ted Flynn, the pilot. After all, he is the one who stirred up this mess.”

Chapter 29 Spiritual Warfare

THE FORCES OF GOOD AND EVIL DO BATTLE

Charles Hoffmiester’s wife, Coleen, had female problems which started about three months prior to the debate, so the couple had not been intimate since that time. The next morning Charles received a call from Carol Belton, one of his parishioners, a beautiful divorced woman in her mid twenties with long blond hair and a very shapely body. Carol told Charles that she was extremely depressed and wanted to talk with him as soon as possible. Charles asked her to meet him at his office at 9:30 A.M. As Charles dressed, he noticed himself giving extra attention to his
appearance. He left his house, started his car and started the drive to his office. He was saying a prayer for guidance as he drove along.

Chapter 30

EMERGENCY MEETING IN THE THIRD HEAVEN

Meanwhile, Gabriel called a meeting of the guardian angels. They were all fully aware of the scene in Lexington.

Gabriel spoke, “My fellow servants of God, we know that God allows Satan to tempt men, but he has promised in his Scriptures that he will not allow anyone to be tempted more than he can bear. I want you to protect Charles Hoffmiester, Fred Clark and Ted Flynn from being tempted more than they can bear. You know what to do. The rest of you continue praying that truth may prevail in this debate.

Chapter 31 Satan Loses

As Charles Hoffmiester was driving to meet Carol, he just finished his prayer when the thought hit him that Satan may be trying to tempt him with this young woman. He did notice that last Sunday as he greeted her with a hug, as was customary in his church, that she held on a bit longer than customary. What could he do? He turned his car around and drove
back to his home. While doing this, he called Coleen on his cell phone and asked her to get ready to accompany him to the conference.

Carol Belton arrived at Charles’ office early and, since his office was unlocked, she went in. Then, while she was waiting for Charles, she took off all her clothes except her silk underwear. When Charles and Coleen arrived, Charles, being the gentleman, opened the door for Coleen. She went in first and quickly shut the door behind her telling her husband to stay out. As expected, Carol Belton was embarrassed and quickly dressed while apologizing profusely to Coleen. She promised Coleen that it would not happen again. She then exited through a side door, got into her car and fled. (There were high fives among the angels.)

The next week Carol Belton took a job in Louisville and moved. The folks in Lexington did not hear from her again.

Another interesting event in the lives of the Hoffmiesters, Coleen’s health suddenly improved and the couple again enjoyed to the fullest God’s exclusive and special gift to married people. Charles, reflecting back over the events, shared the story with Fred. The two men prayed together thanking God for his protection.

The next day, Ted Flynn turned on his computer and opened his email. He had a strange email from someone he didn’t recognize. It aroused his curiosity so he opened it. When he did, he was surprised by a fully nude body of a beautiful woman. He stared for a moment then
quickly deleted it and then opened his message rules and blocked the sender from sending more of the evil stuff. Ted had been addicted to porn prior to his repentance and he didn’t want to ever go there again. Then he called Fred Clark and told him what happened. The two men prayed for God to forgive Ted and protect both of them. (No high fives in hell over this.) The three of them met that afternoon and discussed these unusual events.

Fred opened the discussion, “Brothers, I perceive that this battle is being fought in two realms. Paul warned in Ephesians 6:11-12,

*Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil’s schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.*

After what happened to you today, Charles, and then the Devil tempted you too, Ted, there is no doubt that this debate has attracted both sides in the heavenly realms. They have not tempted me yet, but I’m on guard. This is not a time to let up on our spiritual devotion and prayers.

Charles said, “I don’t know why the thought hit me to go back home and take my wife to the counseling session. Do you think it was put there by one of God’s angels?"

Fred answered, “I believe that the angels are hovering over us here in Lexington. They are excited about the unity drive going on and the search
for truth, and yes, Satan would like nothing better than for one or more of us to be captured in sexual sin. I don’t doubt that an angel put that thought in your mind, Charles.”

Ted responded, “I feel ashamed that I looked at the nude photograph even for a second. My first thought was delete it and block the sender, which I did. There is no doubt that I have been under attack from Satan and his demons for a long time. All the false charges made against me by Dr. Alfonso and the Prosecutor in Lisa’ case while she was in a comma.”

The three men stood with their arm around each other and prayed that God would strengthen them against all future temptations.

Lisa’ parents were furious with their minister, Charles Hoffmiester, and boycotted the remainder of the debate. (He was their minister in the sense that he preached for the same denomination of which they were members back in Monticello.) Lisa’s parents had stayed in a motel in Lexington during the debate. Lisa wanted to continue, but, with very strong pressure from her parents, she hesitated. She loved her parents and she was their only child. They were wonderful parents and had sacrificed much to pay her college tuition. About thirty minutes before time to leave for the second night debate, she called Ted to say she was terribly sorry but I would not be attending the debate that night.

“Why?”
“My Dad has asked me to stay away. Like I’ve told you before, I really love my parents. My Dad took two jobs to pay for my college and I just cannot disappoint him.”

“Lisa, you remember that the very reasons these two ministers are debating each other is for our potential benefit so that we can be united in the same religion?”

“I know that and that makes it even harder for me. My parents are not returning and they have asked me to stay away.”

“What did you think about the debate last night? Do you see any progress toward unity?”

“My Dad was very disappointed in Charles Hoffmiester. He said that Charles should be defrocked.”

“Lisa, I just don’t know what to say. I’m very sorry that you are not going with me, but I have no choice but to accept your decision. I love you. Maybe we can talk tomorrow.”

“Ted, I love you too. Yes, we should talk tomorrow. Bye.”

Charles Hoffmiester’s bishop and fellow ministers were present at the debate. He spoke with them briefly after the debate and set up a meeting with them the next morning. Charles spent many hours in prayer that night. The next morning he met the bishop and fellow ministers of
his church and asked them for help in considering the things presented by Fred Clark.

CHAPTER 32
CHARLES MEETS WITH HIS BISHOPS

Charles met with three of his fellow ministers, one of them was his bishop and his boss. They expressed great disappointment in Charles’ performance during the first night of the debate.

After the customary greetings, Charles began, “Brothers, I have called you here today to share with me your wisdom and to help me defend the truth. Honestly, in all my training in seminary, I never once heard an explanation of the faith/works controversy like Fred Clark presented last night. He defines works in Ephesians 2:8-9 as Keeping the Law of Moses and Circumcision.”

Bishop Fritjof: “Charles, I thought your first presentation last night was commendable. I do have to say, however, that I am very disappointed in your second speech. You practically yielded every point to your opponent.”

Hoffmiester replied, “Thank you, brother Fritjof, for being so honest. I was disappointed in myself. I am searching these things out. If I
am right, please help me to defend it. If I am wrong and Fred Clark is right, I pray God that I will have the humility to accept this new direction.”

Fellow minister Harold Luther said, “Charles, Bishop Fritjof is right. You presented the truth in your first presentation. Your follow-up was, however, uh disgraceful. What is this stuff, ‘If Fred Clark is right?’ He fails to distinguish between law and gospel. You should go over there tonight and re-open the topic of last night and dismiss all his false arguments.”

“Brothers, I do appreciate your good counsel. If I am to re-open the debate on salvation by faith alone, I must honestly answer his most persuasive arguments. Please help me. How do I show that he was wrong about his definition of works? How do I honestly answer his list of fifteen things God says we are saved by without appearing like the blind man who held to the elephant’s tail and rope definition of the elephant, especially when Fred Clark linked that to Matthew 4:4, where Jesus said that man should live by every word that comes from the mouth of God?”

Fellow minister William Willard spoke next, “Charles, you should totally ignore all those silly arguments. If you try to answer them, you will only draw more attention to them. What you do is restate all the Scriptures on salvation by faith and announce with absolute confidence that Fred Clark, though an honest but simple and relatively uneducated man, is deceived. The lay people don’t know much about the Bible and are easily led and, thankfully, they soon forget. If you make the main issue your opponent’s lack of education and your understanding of Greek and
Hebrew, you will win most of your audience. Make the issue your deeper understanding of the Greek and Hebrew.

“Brothers, I can’t ignore Fred Clark’s arguments. If I do, everyone will know, but more important, God will know and I will know. My love for fairness and truth will not allow me to do that.”

Bishop Fritjof said, “Charles, if you go into Fred Clark’s arguments, you will lose what is left of your defense of salvation by faith alone. Furthermore, if you buy into Clark’s arguments, you will be brought up by the Church Bishops on charges of heresy!”

After repeated pleas for help with Fred Clark’s arguments, and the bishop's absolute refusal to even consider them, the meeting broke up and the ministers went home.

Charles fasted and prayed for the remainder of that day until time for the dinner. He began to wonder why the bishops, who were very educated and knowledgeable men, refused to give him any help with Fred Clark’s arguments.

The Hoffmiesters had the Clarks over for dinner that night before the debate. This was not how Satan had planned it. These guys were debating. They should be enemies saying evil things about each other and putting each other down in the debates. This was wrong! These guys and their wives actually loved each other. The wives opened up their lives to each other. They had so much in common. They dared not share their sins with their own members because they were ministers’ wives and their
respective churches had very high expectations from them. If they were open about their sins to their own members, if might lead to their husbands being fired.

Chapter 33 SECOND NIGHT OF THE DEBATE

The moderator said a prayer and then explained that both ministers had agreed to answer questions submitted the previous night in the question box. If the questioner signed his name, he was allowed to come to a microphone and ask the question in person. The fact that the questions were submitted, gave both ministers time to research their subjects and be ready to answer.

FIRST QUESTIONER, a man in his fifties in clergy clothes.

“My question is for Mr. Hoffmiester. Why didn’t you show the truth about baptism by using Acts 2: 37-38? I'll quote it for you.”

When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, “Brothers, what shall we do?”

Peter replied, “Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

The questioner continued, “The word ‘for’ in this passage means ‘because of.’ Peter told these people to get baptized because their sins were already forgiven. We punish a criminal for (because of) his crimes, not that he might do crimes.”
Charles cleared his throat and said, “Sir, I do sincerely appreciate your effort to help me, however, my scholarship in Greek will not allow me to agree with you on that. The actual Greek word translated ‘for’ in Acts 2:38 is ‘eis’ and it means unto or in order to, and not ‘because of.’ What the Greek is saying in Acts 2:38 is repent and be baptized in order to get your sins forgiven. If the inspired writer had wanted to say “because of” he could have used the Greek word “heneka,” (Young) which does mean “because of” as in Romans 14:20 Do not destroy the work of God for the sake of food…”

SECOND QUESTIONER, an African-American man in his forties.

“My question is for Mr. Clark. Jesus didn’t baptize at all and Paul didn’t come to baptize but to preach the gospel. In light of this, how can you say that a person is saved in the water? If baptism was necessary to salvation, why wouldn’t Paul come to baptize?”

Fred answered, “Thank you, sir, for that question. I will do my best to answer it. I believe your first reference is from John 4: 1-2 The Pharisees heard that Jesus was gaining and baptizing more disciples than John, although in fact it was not Jesus who baptized, but his disciples.

It is clear in the context that everyone was baptized who came to Jesus, though not by Jesus himself, but by his disciples. Why didn't Jesus baptize them himself? Perhaps to avoid pride. I can imagine one disciple saying to
another, “I was baptized by Jesus, the Messiah, while you were baptized by Judas and he turned out to be a traitor.”

Your second reference is from I Corinthians 1:13-15

_Is Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you? Were you baptized into the name of Paul? I am thankful that I did not baptize any of you except Crispus and Gaius, so no one can say that you were baptized into my name._

Is it not obvious that Paul was avoiding the same thing here in Corinth as Jesus was in the Gospel of John? One Corinthian might say, ‘I was baptized by the Paul, the great apostle, but you were baptized by Demos who later fell away.’ Again, all were baptized, read

_Acts 18:8 Crispus, the synagogue ruler, and his entire household believed in the Lord; and many of the Corinthians who heard him believed and were baptized._

The important thing was to get baptized. It was not important who did the baptizing. Nowhere in the Bible does one find any reference to the qualifications of the person doing the baptizing. There was a Priest in Modlova who immersed an infant three times without covering his mouth and nose and the child died by drowning. (NY Daily News July 28, 2010)

So, perhaps it might be good to train the baptizers not to drown the subjects. In any case, according to the Bible, infants are not proper subjects for baptism.

THE SECOND QUESTIONER, a follow up question:

“When you are teaching that one is saved in baptism, you are saying that
the power is in the water. I say you are wrong, the power is in the blood of Jesus.”

Fred answered, “I don't disagree with you, sir, that the power to save is in the blood. If you look at my chart of fifteen things which God says we are saved by, I have Jesus’ blood as number one. (Fred had made a huge cloth chart of the 15 things which save us and had posted in on the front wall in full view of everyone.)

PICTURE OF CHART ON FRONT WALL

15 THINGS BY WHICH GOD SAYS, IN HIS BIBLE, THAT WE ARE SAVED:

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>JESUS’ BLOOD--- Romans 5:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>GRACE--- Ephesians 2:8-9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>HOPE---Romans 8:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>CONFESSION---Romans 10:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>DEEDS---James 2:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>GOD'S LOVE—John 3:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>CALLING ON THE NAME OF THE LORD--- Acts 2:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.</td>
<td>MESSAGE (Peter’s sermon)---Acts 11:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.</td>
<td>HOLDING FIRMLY TO THE WORD---I Corinthians 15:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11.</td>
<td>LOVING THE TRUTH---II Thessalonians 2:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12.</td>
<td>BAPTISM I peter 3:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13.</td>
<td>SANCTIFYING WORK OF THE SPIRIT---II Thessalonians 2:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.</td>
<td>OBEDIENCE TO THE GOSPEL II Thessalonians 1:8-9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15.</td>
<td>AND, O YES, FAITH Hebrews 11:6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
One reaches that blood at the point of baptism. Please allow me to explain why God placed the completion of the new birth at baptism. Jesus came to earth, was born of a virgin, preached a wonderful sermon on the mountain which we can read in Matthew 5, 6, & 7. He was already on a mountain, what if he had ascended from right there back into heaven. Where would that leave all of us? It would leave all of us unsaved, and since the wages of sin is death, we would have all faced eternal separation from God in hell. Suppose Jesus stayed a while longer, raised the dead, healed the blind, walked on the water, then ascended back to be with his Father, where would we all be? Lost! Why, because, at this point Jesus had not made it possible for his Father, who is 100% just, to save us. To fully understand to message of the cross, one has to understand justice. All human adults have sinned and face condemnation. If God had forgiven us without the penalty of sin being paid, he would be unjust but God is not unjust!"

“We Americans believe in justice. When people break the law, justice demands that they be punished. We want those pedophiles who kidnap little children, abuse and murder them to be punished. That’s justice. If a judge allows a pedophile to go free, we are outraged because justice was not done. That’s why many states have passed Jessica’s Law.”
“To illustrate justice, please allow me to share a couple of cases from history. There was a man in St. Louis who moved in with a woman and her six year old girl. The man did not marry the woman; he just lived with her and her daughter in her apartment. The woman was working and the man was babysitting the little six year old girl. He raped this child over and over for two years. He was finally charged and brought to court. The man confessed to the rape. What do you think justice demands in this case? The judge decided not to send him to prison, but to put the man on probation for five years. Then, the judge promised that if the man served his probation without violation, his record would be wiped clean.

This was a real case. How does this make you feel? Even the reporters were outraged at the lack of justice. They went to the judge and asked why he didn’t send the rapist to prison. The judge answered that the man had a job. Had a job! What has that to do with justice! The community was justifiably angry with the judge.”

“Now, hear my second story from ancient history. Zaleucus was king of the Italian state of Locrain around 700 B.C. Knowing that adultery is bad for any society, he made a decree that anyone convicted of adultery from that day forward would have both of his eyes put out. After the new law went into effect, the king’s own son was convicted of adultery. What would you do at this point if you were Zaleucus? You
made the law. Are you willing to ignore your own law and become unjust to save your son from blindness? What effect would such action have on your subjects?” What did justice demand in this case? Answer, two eyes. Zaleucus ordered that his son be brought in and that one of his son’s eyes be punched out and that one of his, Zaleucus’ eyes, be punched out. Two eyes would be paid for the crime as demanded by justice and by the law. However, Zaleucus substituted one of his own eyes for one of his son’s eyes so that the son would not be totally blind for the remainder of his life.

Now for the really good news, unlike the story with Zaleucus, Jesus took all the punishment for all our sins when the Father punished those sins in his son’s body on the cross. We go Scott free. We don’t take any of the punishment we deserve, not even one eye. Justice and mercy are opposites. The only place where they can come together is at the cross of Jesus. Justice means punish us as our sins deserve; mercy means treat us better than we deserve.

“Our God is not like the old commercial for Ivory Snow soap, that is was 99.44 % pure. God has to be 100% just, pure, and holy. God is 100% in all his attributes or he would not be God. Notice how many times the words just or justice are used in these two verses to describe God. (Powerpoint)
Romans 3:23-26 for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus. God presented him as a sacrifice of atonement, through faith in his blood. He did this to demonstrate his justice, because in his forbearance he had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished—he did it to demonstrate his justice at the present time, so as to be just and the one who justifies those who have faith in Jesus.

“Notice the two underlined he’s. The antecedent for each is God, the Father. God, the Father, is just. He had Jesus crucified to demonstrate his justice. Because God, the Father, is just, without the crucifixion of Jesus, the Father would not have been able to forgive any of us. Some ask the question how could a just God send any of us to hell forever? They don’t understand justice. The real question is how could a just God save any of us from hell? But, because Jesus was God in the flesh and because he was perfect with no sin, he was more than adequate, by his sacrifice of himself, to pay for all the nauseous mass of all the sins of all men of all time.”

“Satan is called our accuser in the Bible. I can imagine appearing before the judgment seat of God and having Satan come forth to accuse me. Satan, says, ‘God, I see that you have your arm of fellowship around this slimy Fred.’”

God answers, ‘Yes. I have.’
Satan replies, 'Has not Fred been guilty of lying, stealing, cheating, fornicating and many other sins? Are you not corrupting yourself by associating with such scum?'

“At this point I, Fred, am very nervous. What Satan is saying is true. Will God reject me?”

God then answers, ‘Satan, you forget one thing. Jesus, my Son, took all the punishment for all Fred’s lies, stealing and all his other sins when he died on the cross. Now, Fred is to me, as pure as my own Son, Jesus. I am completely just in forgiving Fred because Jesus took all his punishment. Satan, now get back.’

FROM THE AUDIENCE, a woman wearing a clergy robe in mid fifties yelled out, “Mr. Clark. You are right in saying that Jesus paid the total debt for all our sins on the cross and that this enabled to Father, who is 100% just, to forgive us. Since Jesus paid the entire debt, how can you, sir, claim that one has to be baptized to be saved?”

“Thank you, lady, for the question; I will do my best to answer it. Remember Jesus didn’t atone for our sins by any sermons, parables or miracles. Those are all good and reading about them, helps build our faith, but not one of them or all of them put together can atone for our sins. Jesus atoned for our sins when he died on the cross, was buried and rose again the third day. In baptism we are connected with that death, burial and resurrection in a saving way. Look at Colossians 2:12.

*Colossians 2: 12 having been buried with him in baptism and raised with him through your faith in the power of God, who raised him from the dead*
When the sinner decided to die to his sins (repent) and then is immersed in water it is like Jesus being buried in the borrowed tomb and when he/she is lifted out of the water in is a likeness of Jesus’ resurrection. See it again in

Romans 6:3-4: *Or don’t you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.*

As Jesus died on the cross, the sinner must die to his sins, then as Jesus was buried, so the sinner is buried in water and he or she looks like a dead person (Jesus) laid out in the tomb, then when the person is lifted up out of the water it is like Jesus’ resurrection. As a side note, if the person was saved prior to baptism, you would have the situation where a live person would be buried. We don’t generally bury live people, at least intentionally. We bury dead people. Jesus shed his blood in his death John 19:33-34

But when they came to Jesus and found that he was already dead, they did not break his legs. Instead, one of the soldiers pierced Jesus’ side with a spear, bringing a sudden flow of blood and water.

Jesus side was pierced after he was dead bringing forth a sudden flow of blood and water. We, according to Romans above, are baptized into his death where his blood was shed, therefore coming in contact with his blood. We are also baptized into Christ. Before one is baptized that person is not yet in Christ, Galatians 3: 26-27.”
“To summarize, God, the Father, could not and would not save us without justice being done because he is just. Jesus, God’s Son, went to the cross to pay the debt for all of us. God saves us at baptism when we through faith re-enact the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus, where Jesus made atonement for all of us. Why would anyone want to invent a man made plan of salvation divorced from baptism and the cross?

To make it abundantly clear lady, consider this Scripture:

(Powerpoint)

I Peter 3:20-21 who disobeyed long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built. In it only a few people, eight in all, were saved through water, and this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also—not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a good conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

You can clearly see that Peter here states twice that baptism saves. Notice that I made the “it” in the last sentence bold. To what does it refer? It refers to baptism. It, baptism saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

THE THIRD QUESTIONER, a Caucasian man in his thirties said, “Mr. Clark, no wonder you don't call yourself Reverend, because you are not one. This is nonsense. When I prayed Jesus into my heart, I didn’t need any one or the Bible to tell me I was saved because I felt it. I know I was saved before baptism. (With that statement, the gentleman left the meeting.)
Hoffmiester: “Sorry to see the gentleman leave before we have an opportunity to answer him. Had he stayed, I would have suggested that he consider the message in the following Scripture: Proverbs 14:12 *There is a way that seems right to a man, but in the end it leads to death.*

God seems to be warning us to be careful about trusting ourselves and the way we feel as a source of truth. Jesus told us that the word of God is truth.

FOURTH QUESTIONER, a young Chinese-American man in his late twenties asked, “My question is for Fred. The previous questioner claims she was saved by prayer. Jesus teaches us that if we ask we will receive. How can you deny the power of prayer to save when Jesus himself made this promise?

“Thanks you, that is a good question and right on point. The conversion of Saul, later changed to Paul, is recorded in Acts chapters 9, 22 and 26. As Paul was traveling to Damascus to persecute Christians, Jesus appeared to him. After Paul recognized that Jesus really was the Messiah, he asked Jesus what to do. Jesus told him to get up and go into the city of Damascus and he would be told there what he must do. Paul got up and was blind. He was led by the hand into the city where he prayed and fasted for three days. If anyone could be saved through prayer, Paul certainly would have been one of them. Three days later he was still unsaved when God’s appointed preacher came to him to tell him what to
do. It is recorded in Acts 22:16. *And now what are you waiting for? Get up, be baptized and wash your sins away, calling on his name.*

Everyone knows that one cannot be saved until God forgives his sins. Paul saw Jesus and was still lost. Paul, while blind, prayed and fasted three days and was still lost. He was not saved until he was baptized and washed his sins away.

FOURTH QUESTIONER, follow up question, “Sir, how, then, do you explain Romans 10:13, which says that everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved? This lady evidently called on the name of the Lord.”

“Thank you, Sir, “excellent question, just looking at this one verse, one might easily take it out of context and misunderstand it. Let us look at it more closely. Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved. Not many or most, but *everyone* who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved. That's in the Bible. It must be true. What does it mean to call on the name of the Lord? Does the Bible shed any light on that question? Is it just calling out “Lord, Lord?” No, because of what Jesus said about judgment in Matthew 7:21-23. I have those verses on my projector. (Powerpoint)

> "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name,"
If just calling out the words “Lord, Lord” would save everyone, then these people would have been saved. They were not. They thought they were serving Jesus, but they had missed the new birth.

THE FOURTH QUESTIONER, yelled out, Sir, you are just assuming that they missed the new birth. That’s the problem with you people, you just assume.

In answer Fred said, “Please sir, look closely at verse 23 above,

Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!'

Do you see the words in that verse, “I never knew you?”

“If these people had ever been born again, Jesus would not have said I never knew you, because he knows all born again disciples. He might have said, “You made a good start, why did you turn aside to Satan?”

FOURTH QUESTIONER, still arguing, “Okay, you may be right on that, but the statement still stands in Romans 10:13, everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved. You have not answered that?”
“No sir, I haven’t, but I will now. Remember Paul and Acts 22:16 (Again Fred puts the Scripture on the screen.)

And now why are you waiting? Arise and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.’ (New KJV)

I have two questions, one, where did Paul himself ‘call on the name of the Lord?’ As you can plainly see from this verse, it was during the act of baptism. That’s where this saving kind of calling takes place. Second question, who wrote Romans 10:13? Answer, Paul the apostle. Again, where did Paul call on the name of the Lord? In baptism, so you can see how important context is in properly understanding the Bible. Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord in baptism will be saved.

FIFTH QUESTIONER, a man in his early sixties, said, “Mr. Hoffmiester, you should be ashamed of your performance in this debate. You appear to be on Fred Clark’s side in this debate. The one Scripture which nails this whole argument down is the thief on the cross recorded in Luke 23:42-43

Then he said, “Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom.” Jesus answered him, “I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise.”

This thief was not baptized and he was saved. I’d like to hear Mr. Clark on that. It seems that I’m having to do Mr. Hoffmiester’s work for him.”

(There was a scattering of applause for the questioner.)
Charles spoke first, “Sir, I would like to clarify one point in your observation. I am not on anybody’s side in this discussion. I am on the side of truth. I came into this discussion with an open mind to learn and not to try to prove what I already believe.”

Fred then spoke, “Thank you for the question. I don’t have to defend Charles Hoffmiester. He has taken the unusual step of being true to his conscience regardless of church doctrine and job security and, to a lesser degree, so have I when I agreed with him that clergy titles and robes were not authorized in the Bible. He has entered this debate with a heart to know truth. He has enlightened me and has shown the integrity to honestly consider what I’ve presented. This is a godly approach and could lead to unity instead of division among Christians. I don’t know that I would have had the courage he has displayed in this debate.”

“Now, to your question, I agree with you that most likely the thief went to paradise without baptism although no one can be 100% certain that he was never baptized. Mark 1:5 The whole Judean countryside and all the people of Jerusalem went out to him. Confessing their sins, they were baptized by him in the Jordan River.

This said the “whole Judean countryside and all the people of Jerusalem” went, confessed their sins and were baptized. The thief, no doubt, would
have had sins to confess. In spite of this, I would not argue that the thief was baptized, but that is not the issue."

“There were many, many people who were saved without baptism. Allow me to give you a few examples, Daniel who was thrown into the Lions’ den, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego who were thrown into the fiery furnace were not baptized with water...”

At this point the fifth questioner angrily interrupted Fred. “Sir, you are evading the issue. Wow! You are slippery! Those men you mentioned were not commanded to be baptized. Baptism is a New Testament subject.”

Fred answered, “The gentleman is right and he made my point for me. Thank you, Sir. These men lived at a different time and under a different covenant. They were never commanded to be baptized as you have not been commanded to be circumcised nor have you been commanded to abstain from catfish, and pork chops, Leviticus 11. Now we live under the New Covenant and for us Jesus declares all foods clean, Mark 7:19. The two covenants could not be in effect at the same time because they are so different. For example, according to the Old Covenant, the Law of Moses, men were to be circumcised. God was about to kill Moses because his son was not circumcised (Exodus 4:24) while in the New Testament, if one is circumcised, he falls from grace, Galatians
5:3-4 Again I declare to every man who lets himself be circumcised that he is obligated to obey the whole law. You who are trying to be justified by law have been alienated from Christ; you have fallen away from grace.

The two covenants could not be in force simultaneously, hence he says in Hebrews 10:9 *Then he said, "Here I am, I have come to do your will."* *He sets aside the first to establish the second.*

When the thief made his request, the Law of Moses was still in effect and the New Covenant had not been established. We live under the New Testament established by Jesus himself when he died on the cross. It is important to know exactly when that New Covenant started and exactly when the old one ended. Jesus made that clear to us in the Bible." I'll make that clear in a moment.

“First, allow me to offer an analogy. The United States of America has had two different constitutions—The Articles of Confederation, (1781-1789) and the United States Constitution, (1789 to the present). The first one had to be set aside before the second one could become the law of the land. That’s because the two constitutions are so different that they could not be in effect at the same time. For example, the only way the first Constitution could be amended was with the unanimous consent of all Thirteen States. We have an entirely different amendment system in Article Five of the present Constitution and it does not take unanimous
agreement of the states. The same thing happened with the Old Covenant and the New Covenant. The Law of Moses had to be set aside before the New Testament based on the sacrifice of Jesus, not animals, could be established. It is important to know exactly the time when the change in covenants took place.”

“In Matthew 17:1-9, three of Jesus apostles were privileged to witness the transfiguration of Jesus talking with Moses and Elijah. Peter wanted to put up three shelters, one for each of the three. He wanted to keep Moses and Elijah around for a while. Moses had been dead around fifteen hundred years before Peter lived and, no doubt, Peter had been hearing Moses quoted and talked about in the synagogues since his earliest memories. Now, he could become the expert on Moses and Elijah. Next Saturday in the synagogue, he would be able to share directly from Moses. You know what happened next? A bright cloud enveloped them and the Father spoke, ‘This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased. Listen to him!’ When the three apostles heard this, they fell face down terrified. When they got up, Moses and Elijah had disappeared. No need for two of the shelters now. The point of this experience was that they would no longer listen to Moses or Elijah, but to Jesus. Only three of Jesus’ apostles were with him. Don’t you know that these three apostles couldn’t wait to share with the nine what they had witnessed as soon as they descended down the mountain to where the
nine were waiting? But, then Jesus said, Matthew 17:9... As they were coming down the mountain, Jesus instructed them, “Don’t tell anyone what you have seen, until the Son of Man has been raised from the dead.”

Why would Jesus say this? The Law of Moses was still in effect until Jesus actually died on the cross. To go out there and tell people to stop listening to Moses and Elijah at that time would have been premature. When could they tell the nine and the rest of the world? They could tell it after Jesus’ resurrection when the new covenant was established. To nail it down, look at Hebrews 9:16-17 I think I have that verse on powerpoint too.

(Powerpoint)

\[\text{For where a covenant is, there must of necessity be the death of the one who made it. For a covenant is valid only when men are dead, for it is never in force while the one who made it lives. NASB}\]

When did the new covenant go into effect? Answer, at the death of Jesus. Jesus had not died when the thief made his request. The thief was still living under the Law of Moses.

“After his death, burial and resurrection, Jesus gave us what is called the Great Commission. Notice that this command was given after Jesus established his New Covenant. This baptism was never commanded or practiced during the time Moses’ Law was in effect. (Powerpoint)
Matthew 28: 19 *Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,*

When could the disciples start carrying out this Great Commission and doing this baptism? Not yet, Jesus stated further instructions, Luke 24:49

*I am going to send you what my Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high.*

That power came on the day of Pentecost as recorded in Acts 2 and the first baptisms of this Great Commission came on that day when 3,000 were baptized. The thief died around fifty days before anyone had been baptized with the Great Commission baptism. He lived and died under a different covenant. If he had received any baptism, it would have been John’s baptism. John did not baptize in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit. While Jesus was on earth he had authority to forgive sins any way he pleased as he did with the thief. When the rich ruler asked what he must do to inherit eternal life, Jesus mentioned the commandments, then told him to sell everything he had, give it to the poor and come and follow him, Luke 18. As an aside, how many preachers hold this story up as an example of how to be saved? The context is there. The ruler asked Jesus specifically what must he do to inherit eternal life. He was told to sell everything he had and give it to the poor. How many preachers have told people to do that to be saved? They run to the thief because it was impossible for him to do anything besides listen and talk at that point.”
“Jesus forgave the sins of the man lowered by ropes into the house where he was, and to prove that he had power to forgive sins, he healed the man, Mark 2. So, while living on earth, Jesus saved men in different ways, but once he died and was resurrected, his covenant was in effect and all who want to be saved must obey Jesus’ commands and one of them is to be baptized in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, Matthew 28:18-20, to wash away their sins, Acts 22:16.

What was in effect was John’s baptism. John’s baptism ended when the Great Commission baptism went into effect. Those baptized with John’s baptism after that point (about 12) had to be re-baptized into Jesus, Acts 19:5 (Powerpoint)

**Acts 19:5** On hearing this, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus.

SIXTH QUESTIONER, a well dressed white man in his seventies, asked, “Mr. Clark, I have a mother who loves God, she helps the poor, she is kind to her family, and she prays, are you going to tell me that she is lost because she has never been baptized? That idea is so hostile to my mind that I would not want to serve a God like that.

“I’m not surprised that the idea of baptism for the remission of sins is hostile to men’s minds. God foretold this in Isaiah 55:8-9:

(Powerpoint)
Isaiah 55:8-9 "For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways," declares the LORD. As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.

As to your mother, I am not her judge. Jesus stated in John 12:47-48 that all of us will be judged by his words. He commanded baptism.

Matthew 28:18-20 Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

Why do you think Jesus couched this command in the context of his having all authority in heaven and on earth? Because he knew that baptism, which is connected to his death, burial and resurrection in the new birth would be the main target of attack from Satan and all his demons and those under his influence. If anyone tried to defend God’s way over Satan’s way, they could expect emotionalism instead of truth as a rebuttal. If they could popularize some theology which supports a new birth without baptism, people would think they were saved while they were not and Satan wins. If anyone wants to chance it and try to get in without baptism, it won’t be me that hinders them. I wish them well, but I can tell you plainly that I don’t want to take that chance myself. Eternity is too long.”
“Jesus told the parable of the wedding banquet in Matthew 22:1-14. When the King came in he noticed a man without wedding clothes and had him thrown out. Matthew 22:13 (Powerpoint)

Then the king told the attendants, “Tie him hand and foot, and throw him outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”

I would say from this parable that it is absolutely necessary to be dressed in wedding clothes, don’t you? Does the Bible have anything to say about how we get our wedding clothes? Yes it does, Galatians 3:26-27 (Powerpoint)

3:27-28 You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.

First the apostle states that we are sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. Then he explains how that happened, for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. How did you get into Christ? You get into Christ through baptism, then, as an added bonus, you are clothed with Christ. Do you want wedding clothes when you appear before the King? I do and I hope your mother will too.

At this point Fred received a standing ovation from about two thirds of the audience, including Charles Hoffmiester.
SEVENTH QUESTIONER, an older white man with a beard asked, “Mr. Hoffmiester, why didn’t you ask your opponent about the sinner’s prayer which is clearly sanctioned: (Questioner read from his Bible)

John 1:11-13 “Even in his own land and among his own people, the Jews, he was not accepted. Only a few welcomed him and received him. But to all who received him, he gave the right to become children of God, (V.12) All they needed to do was to trust him to save them. All those who believe this are reborn!—Not a physical rebirth resulting from human passion or plan—but from the will of God.”

Charles asked, “What version of the Bible are you reading sir?”

“The Living Bible.”

“What is the copyright date.”

“1960”

Then Charles explained, “Kenneth Taylor is the author of that translation. The words, “ALL THEY NEEDED TO DO WAS TO TRUST HIM TO SAVE THEM. ALL THOSE WHO BELIEVE THIS ARE REBORN,” are completely without foundation on the original Greek manuscripts. Those words have no support at all in the original Greek. In Steve Staten’s words ‘they are a blatant insertion placed there by the translator, Kenneth Taylor.’ The publisher somewhat cleared this up in the 1990’s edition, but, by then, the
damage had already been done. The New International Version, accepted by most churches, translates it this way:

John 1:11-13 He came to that which was his own, but his own did not receive him. Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God—children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

Those who teach the sinner's prayer will have to look elsewhere for support of their theory. It is not supported in John 1:11-13. Most translations of verse 12 read like the NIV, those who believed, he gave the right to become children of God. He didn't say that they were already children as soon as they believed, but that they had the right to become children of God.”

This ended all the questions which had been submitted. The moderator said a prayer and invited Charles Hoffmiester to come to the podium and continue his presentation.

Charles began, “Ladies and Gentlemen and fellow ministers and Fred, it is with great humility that I stand in front of you tonight to share with you my understanding of God’s word. I told you last night that I would consult with other ministers in my church and spend time in prayer asking God for wisdom to discern his truth. I did that. As I stated last night, these explanations given by Fred harmonizing James and Paul
on works were brand new to me. In all my training as a minister, not once was this mentioned.

I called three of my fellow ministers over today to share with me their wisdom on these matters. One of them is my bishop who is my boss. I had hoped that they would help me answer Fred’s very persuasive arguments if he was, in fact, wrong. They gave me no help at all. They advised me to stay totally away from Fred’s arguments and play up my knowledge of Greek and Hebrew and his lack of knowledge in these areas. They advised me to stay away from his arguments or I would lose. They further advised me to just restate my first speech and emphasize scriptures on faith. To follow their advice would, in my mind, make me exactly like the blind man who felt the tail of the elephant and went away arguing that the elephant was like a rope only and not like a spear, etc. I am still studying these things and need even more time to digest what I’ve heard in this debate. I would remind you that there are other topics and areas on which Fred and I differ, which we will discuss tomorrow night. Tonight, I would like to learn more from Fred about the new birth.

With these words Charles stepped down while there were loud boos from a few in the audience.

The moderator came to the podium and invited Fred to make his presentation.
Fred began, “Ladies and Gentlemen, fellow ministers and Charles, I want to thank all of you for coming. Charles, thank you, you are a most honorable person. I hope that I can be as open to truth as you have been when we come to issues about which I may be wrong. If I am, I pray for an open heart like yours which loves the truth more than job security, traditions or anything else which hinders my acceptance of truth. To properly understand where this doctrine started, we need some historical perspective.

“From where did all this teaching salvation by faith alone come? It came from Martin Luther. I am a fan of Martin Luther. He sparked the Protestant Reformation and broke the monopoly the Roman Catholic Church had on the Western World. He held that Scripture was the source of truth instead of the Pope. He wrote some of our greatest hymns like *A Mighty Fortress is our God.*

Unfortunately, Luther was so convinced that salvation was by faith alone that he inserted the word alone (Romans 3:28) into his German translation of the Bible. (Powerpoint)

Romans 3:28 For we maintain that a man is justified by faith (alone) apart from works of the Law.

When questioned about adding the word “alone” to the text of his Bible, Luther said: “…I know very well that the word ‘alone’ is not in the Latin or Greek text.”
When questioned further, Luther said: “I will have it so, and I order it to be so, and my will is reason enough.”

How does this attitude and action of adding to the Scriptures square with God? (powerpoint)

Deuteronomy 4:2 *You shall not add to the word which I am commanding you, nor take away from it, that you may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you.*

Proverbs 30:6 *Do not add to his words, or he will rebuke you and prove you a liar.*

Revelation 22:18 *I warn everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds anything to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book.* NIV

Look at the words in Revelation 22:18 “If anyone adds anything to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book. This sounds to me like God is serious about not tampering with his word, the Bible. Luther violated all three of these Scriptures, as did Kenneth Taylor in his Living Bible translation, which were put there by God to prevent the very thing Luther and Taylor did. If every man could, at his own will, add whatever he liked to the Scriptures, we’d have Scriptures so corrupted that no one would know what God’s original intent was. As Charles pointed out tonight, Kenneth Taylor followed in Luther’s footsteps when he added words to authorize the Sinners Prayer to his 1960 edition of the Living
Bible. John 1:12 in that Bible, according to Charles, has no foundation in the Greek from which our New Testament is translated.

Why would Luther do such a thing? In his day, the Roman Catholic Church had swung to the salvation by works extreme. Humans, like the pendulum of a clock, tend to swing from one extreme to the other. Luther correctly understood that the Catholics were wrong on works, so he went to the opposite extreme—salvation by faith alone. The truth is not in either extreme, it is in the middle, but, when someone takes the middle road, people on both extremes throw rocks at him.

What may have helped Luther to go to this extreme was his faulty understanding of the word faith. Faith, like salvation, can have two meanings. There is intellectual faith without action like the demons had in James 2:19, (Powerpoint)

James 2:19 You believe that there is one God. Good! Even the demons believe that—and shudder.

And like the leaders,

John 12:42 Yet at the same time many even among the leaders believed in him. But because of the Pharisees they would not confess their faith for fear they would be put out of the synagogue;

Second, there is the saving faith which is always accompanied with actions. For example, if I see something in a distance in the woods which could be a large poisonous rattlesnake snake and I fully believe that it is
a rattlesnake and I fully believe that its bite can be deadly, I will not go near it. I will do everything in my power to avoid getting bit. It might not be a snake at all, it could be just an illusion from a stick, but, if I fully believe that it is a large rattlesnake, I will act on that belief.

Saving faith is used in the New Testament to stand for man’s total response to God in obedience: (Powerpoint)

Hebrews 3:18-19 And to whom did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.

Do you see the context of faith (belief) here? Those who disobeyed were kept out. Why, because of their unbelief. The obvious flip side of the issue is that, if they had believed, they would have obeyed, because saving faith is the same as obedience as is seen in this Scripture! Another way of explaining this Scripture is as follows: belief or saving faith=obedience while unbelief=disobedience.

Another Scripture from James makes this same point, but in a different way (two different translations—NIV and NASB). (Powerpoint)

James 2:17 In the same way, faith by itself, if it is not accompanied by action, is dead. NIV

James 2:17 Even so faith, if it has no works, is dead, being by itself. NASB

My question to all of you here tonight is, can dead faith save? I know that we have many from the clergy here tonight. There must be a wealth of
Bible knowledge present in this auditorium, so I ask, can any of you here tonight come to the podium and offer Bible proof that dead faith can save?”

Fred again waits for 30 seconds. There was silence in the auditorium and no show of hands was seen.

“Okay, since no one offered any proof, I think it is safe to say that dead faith cannot save.”

At this point another man rose in the audience and questioned Fred’s credentials. “Do you think you know more than Martin Luther? Luther was a doctor. Before I could accept this ridiculous theory you’ve proposed here tonight, I’d have to see it accepted by those with PhD’s in theology.”

“Sir, you raise a good question and I wish to answer it. When Jesus selected his twelve Apostles, did he select the educated rabbis and lawyers or did he select fishermen and tax collectors? I ask, in Jesus’ day did the majority of those who recognized him as the true Messiah come from the religious doctors and theologians or from among the common people?

(Powerpoint)

**John 4:13** When they saw the courage of Peter and John and realized that they were unschooled, ordinary men, they were astonished and they took note that these men had been with Jesus.
Do the educated have a leg up over the common people when it comes to recognizing truth? The chief priests and Pharisees sent soldiers to arrest Jesus. The soldiers came back without arresting Jesus. We pick up in John 7: 45-49: (Powerpoint)

John 7:45-49 Finally the temple guards went back to the chief priests and Pharisees, who asked them, “Why didn't you bring him in?” “No one ever spoke the way this man does,” the guards declared. “You mean he has deceived you also?” the Pharisees retorted. “Has any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed in him? No! But this mob that knows nothing of the law—there is a curse on them.”

The guards recognized a truth about Jesus that these educated religious rulers missed. In the Bible, it appears that the more education that a person had, the more difficult it was for him to recognize truth. These guys were wrong, of course, about no members of the Sanhedrin believing in Jesus. There were two of the 71 members of the ruling council who did believe in Jesus—Nicodemus and Joseph of Arimathea. Again, that makes my point—2 out of 71! Along the same line consider: (Powerpoint)

1 Corinthians 1:26 Brothers, think of what you were when you were called. Not many of you were wise by human standards; not many were influential; not many were of noble birth.

“I hope that the gentleman will consider the things which I have presented here tonight in light of the Bible rather than in the light of people who will dismiss this presentation without a fair hearing.”
“I have no doubt that God's Holy Spirit is present in this place and that He is pleased with what he witnessed here tonight. I invite all of you back tomorrow night.”

(With these words, Fred sat down and the moderator came to the podium and invited the audience to submit questions which the ministers would answer the third night of the debate. He pointed to boxes at the exits where people could deposit their questions as they left the building. He then said a dismissal prayer and dismissed the audience.)

Note to Reader: If you’d like to read the remainder of this debate, you will find it in the Appendix B.

After the debate was over, both churches fired their ministers. As you would know if you read the last part of the debate in Appendix B, Fred learned from Charles and changed many of his prior convictions. Fred did not have a corner on all truth. Because Fred was humble, able to be taught and had a hunger for truth, Charles convinced Fred to change his mind about several other important issues. Fred and Charles then joined together and started a church inspired by the example of Josiah, one of Judah’s kings in the Old Testament. Meanwhile, Ted is still struggling with his own salvation.

CHAPTER 34 TED LEARNS THE TRUTH ABOUT THE NEW BIRTH
Ted was reading the Bible more and attending church services regularly since he had moved to Lexington. He attended the new church with Fred Clark and Charles Hoffmiester. Ted read a passage in the Bible where Jesus warned that if, “a blind man leads a blind man both will fall into a pit.” Ted reasoned that perhaps each individual should read the Bible for themselves to verify what is truth rather than blindly accepting whatever their pastor, preacher or priest tells them. If truth was important in this unfortunate and needless crash with the Comair Jet, how much more important where eternity is involved?

Ted made an appointment with Fred Clark to talk about salvation and the confusion he experienced from all the contradictory teachings from different churches. They met in a fast food restaurant by a lake. The Fred brought along a young friend, Joseph, who was a recent convert.

Fred said, “Good morning Ted. This is my friend Joseph who was recently born again.”

Joseph replied, “Good morning Ted. It is good to meet you.”

“Thank both of you for meeting with me. As you know, I attended all the debates between you and Charles and I learned much, but I do have a couple of lingering questions. When I read the book of Acts, I see what appears to be differing or even contradictory answers to the question about how to be saved. For example, in Acts 16:30 I see the jailer asking the
question, ‘what must I do to be saved.’ The answer was to believe on the Lord Jesus and you will be saved. Then I read in Acts 2: 37-38 where the crowd asked Peter the same question and Peter answered, ‘Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.’ Peter didn’t even tell them to believe and that seemed to be the main message from Paul to the jailor. Then, when I studied out the conversion of Paul, he was told to go to Damascus and he would be told there what he must do. Three days later the answer came (Acts 22:16). He was told to get up and get baptized to wash his sins away. He was not told to believe or repent. Fred, can you help explain this to me? I have been to churches which teach the answer in Acts 16 and say that all one has to do is to believe. I am confused because in the other places, Acts 2:38 and Acts 22:16, believing is not even mentioned.”

“Ted, I’m impressed that you have been so diligent in searching out the truth. Quite honestly, I’ve never encountered an individual who has studied out how to be saved to this degree. I believe that I can help you.”

“Let me give you an analogy which may help clear up the confusion. Suppose that you were hiking in the mountains and you met another hiker coming the opposite way. You say him, ‘Sir, how far it is it to Camp Ono?’ He answers three miles. You continue on toward Camp Ono for another mile when you meet a second person and you ask this person the exact same question, ‘How far to Camp Ono?’ The second person says two miles.
Same question, different answer! Are you puzzled? You continue one more mile toward this camp site when you meet a third person coming the opposite way and, again, you ask the exact same question, ‘How far to Camp Ono?’ This person answers one mile. Ted, can you make sense out of these three contradictory answers?”

“Of course, each of the three persons answered correctly because they all answered me from where I was standing when I asked the question. When I met the first person I was three miles from Camp Ono. I walked on a mile toward the camp and met the second person. At that point was two miles from Camp Ono and even though I asked the same question, I received a different, but a correct answer and so on to the third.”

Ted this same principle explains the three conversions you mentioned in Acts. If you will allow me to apply the story, the jailor was three miles from salvation. Paul and Silas had been guided by the Holy Spirit to go to Europe. The first city they came to was Philippi. As usual, persecution followed and Paul and Silas were cast into prison. At midnight an
earthquake shook the prison and all the chains fell off and the prison door were opened. The jailor, thinking the prisoners had escaped, was about to kill himself. Acts 16:28 Paul shouted to him, ‘Don’t harm yourself! We are all here.’ The jailer knew something supernatural was going on, but he didn’t know what. When he asked what he must do to be saved, there is no evidence that he had ever even heard a sermon about Jesus. Paul gave him the first step--believe in the Lord Jesus. As Paul wrote in: Romans 10:15, *how can they believe in the one of whom they have not heard and how can they hear without someone preaching to them?*

Since there is no evidence that this jailer had ever heard a sermon, right after Paul instructed him to believe, Paul then preached the word to him so that he could believe. Acts 16:32 *Then they spoke the word of the Lord to him and to all the others in his house.*

After the sermon, the jailer took them and washed their wounds. That sounds like repentance to me, and then he and his family were baptized.”

“Now, we will consider the second conversion recorded in Acts 2. Joseph, will you read the entire chapter for us?

“Sure.” Joseph then read all of Acts chapter 2.

“Thank you Joseph. Ted do you know the three main words in real estate?”
“I’ve heard them, location, location, and location.”

“That’s right, and the three main words in understanding the Bible are context, context, and context. Let’s review what Joseph just read. This happened on the day of Pentecost while there were Jews from every nation under heaven gathered in Jerusalem. First, there was the mighty wind noise which attracted a great crowd. When the crowd responded to the wind, they saw on the heads of God’s people what looked like tongues of fire. Then they heard the gospel preached in their own native languages in which they were born. The guy from Germany heard German and the gal from Spain heard Spanish and so on. These people were utterly amazed because these men who were speaking were Galileans. How could they speak in all these foreign languages? Then Peter arose and preached a long sermon to them showing from Old Testament Scripture that Jesus was the one who fulfilled the prophesies of Joel and David. Peter preached the resurrection of Jesus of which he and the other eleven Apostles were eye witnesses. Then Peter concluded with these words: Acts 2:36 "Therefore let all Israel be assured of this: God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ."

“At this point the crowd asked the question: Acts 2:37 When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, "Brothers, what shall we do?"
Then Peter gave them the answer, Acts 2:38 Peter replied, “Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit

“Ted, tell me, why didn’t Peter tell these people to believe like Paul told the Jailer?”

Ted answered, “Because they had already believed. They heard the noise, they saw the tongues on the heads of the people, they heard the gospel in their own native languages and they heard Peter’s sermon, they had the testimony of twelve reliable apostles, of course, they had already come to faith. They were like me at the two mile point walking toward the Camp Ono. Why tell them to do something they had already done. I am beginning to get the point, context, context, and context.”

“Excellent, Ted! Now let’s consider Saul’s conversion. This conversion is contained in three different chapters in Acts---Acts chapters 9, 22 and 26. I will summarize the three. Saul, whose name was later changed to Paul, was a persecutor of Christians. He was on his way from Jerusalem to Damascus to persecute Christians there when Jesus appeared to him on the road. Once Saul realized that Jesus was really the Messiah and that by persecuting Christians, he was persecuting Jesus, he asked what he should do. Jesus told him to go into the city of Damascus and that he would be told there what he must do. When Saul arose from
the ground, he was blind and had to be led by the hand to the city. Saul waited for three days for an answer. During that time he was fasting and praying. Finally the answer came. God sent Ananias to give him the answer in: Acts 22:16 *And now what are you waiting for? Get up, be baptized and wash your sins away, calling on his name.*

“Ted, can you tell me why Ananias didn’t tell Saul to believe?”

“Because Saul actually saw and talked with Jesus. He already believed.”

“Right, Ted, and why didn’t Ananias tell Saul to repent?”

“Because Saul had spent three days in penitent prayer. Now I get it, Saul was at the one mile point in his journey to salvation as the guy was one mile from Camp Ono.”

“Very good, Ted. You said you had a couple of questions. What is your other question?”

“I was baptized as a baby. I have asked for Bible authorization for baptizing babies and I was given Acts 16:15 where Lydia and her household were baptized. Then in Acts 16:33, the jailer and all his family were baptized. I was told that there were likely infants in these households and therefore infant baptism was authorized.”
“Ted, I love it that you are searching these things out for yourself rather than just taking the word of people without Bible proof. In answer to your question, are there households today who have infants in them and are there other households in which there are no infants?

“Yes. In my family there are no infants now. My sister and I are both adults.”

“Ted, is it fair to say that if authority for baptizing infants is based on the possibility that there might have been infants in the Jailer’s family and that there might have been infants in Lydia’s household, then that authority is based on an assumption?”

“Wow! I see the point. Those pilots who crashed the Comair Jet did so because they assumed they were on the correct runway. Assumptions can be very misleading.

Ted, one more verse which supports the idea that adults are proper subjects for baptism, not infants: Acts 8:12 But when they believed Philip as he preached the good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

“Were there no babies in all of Samaria that they baptized men and women, but not babies?”
Wow, Ted, you come prepared. It doesn’t make sense to me that there were no babies in all of Samaria!

“Another point from the same Scripture, they baptized those who believed. Infants can’t believe.” Also, Mark makes the same point in: Mark 16:15-16 He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.

“Fred, thank you so much. You have answered my questions with Scriptures and in their context. Your answers are so different from those I received from Reverend Baugh. He told me I should just take his word for it because he was a professional. Now I know that I am not saved. What do I still lack besides baptism?

At this point, Fred talked about true repentance, confessing sins and what it meant to confess Jesus as Lord. Fred then told Ted about his ugly past and how Satan had taken charge of his life prior to his conversion. Joseph then joined in confessing his sins prior to his conversion. Knowing that these men were just like him, sinners, Ted openly confessed his sins to the two men. He had stolen some things as a teenager and had told lies. Both men were pleasantly surprised to learn that Ted was still a virgin, though he had been overwhelmed with lust and had looked at porn on the web.
Next, Fred Clark explained what it meant to confess Jesus as Lord. “You realize that confessing Jesus as Lord is more than just words. It is saying that Jesus will rule in your heart. That you will do what he wants and not just what you want or desire for the rest of your life?” Romans 10: 9-10 That if you confess with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved.

Ted answered, Here and now I confess that Jesus is Lord. I will obey him.”

“New birth means a new life. You cannot continue to live the way you did prior to being born again.”

“I understand. I don’t want my old life anymore.”

Ted noticed a distinct difference between the teachings of Noel Baugh who gave him the “Sinner’s Prayer,” and Fred Clark. Baugh told Ted to just take his word for it, that he had a Ph.D. in theology and Ted should just trust him. Fred Clark, on the other hand, had shown his Scripture for everything he said.
Looking over at a small lake by the restaurant where they were sitting and remembering the story of the Ethiopian in Acts 8, Ted said, “There is water, why can’t I be baptized?”

Fred Clark and Joseph took Ted to the lake, waded out into the water and immersed him in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit for the forgiveness of his sins. Ted arose from the water wild with excitement and rejoicing with the two men beside him. He had been born again!

Ted then called his parents to share with them his conversion and his insights on the new birth. They were suspicious of his enthusiasm and his new religion and were not open to hearing him out. Ted then called his sister who lived with her husband in Michigan and she was excited about Ted’s conversion and listened with intense interest at what Ted was telling her. Ted remembered the Scripture in Luke 14 that one must put Jesus above parents.

CHAPTER 35 --- JOSIAH

As stated earlier, Charles and Fred started a church inspired by the example of Josiah in the Old Testament. Josiah became King of Judah when he was eight years old and reigned 31 years. Josiah’s father, Amon and grandfather, Manasseh, were among Judah’s evil kings, so, one might have expected that Josiah would be evil too.
This was far from the case. From a very young age, Josiah did what was right in the eyes of the Lord. When he was eighteen, he ordered that the Temple of the Lord be repaired. While men were repairing the Temple, they found the Bible. These men then read it and they took it to King Josiah and read it to him. When he heard the Scriptures and realized how far he and his people had departed from the true teachings of God and how corrupt their worship was, Josiah was so upset that he wept and tore his clothes.

The nation had become so wicked that God had already decided to destroy it. Josiah sent for the prophetess Huldah to find out what God had in store for them. Because of Josiah’s soft heart, God decided to postpone the destruction of Jerusalem and Judah during his lifetime and reign.

Bible in hand, (Which no doubt included the writings of Moses, the first five books of the Old Testament), Josiah then started a movement in his kingdom to throw out the corrupted practices in religion which did not square with the Bible. He began by having the entire Bible read to all the people. The King then not only pledged to keep all God’s commands himself, but had the people of his nation to pledge the same.

Josiah then proceeded to restore true worship in his kingdom using the Scriptures as his guide. The Jews had actually placed things in the temple of the Lord for false gods like Baal and other false idol gods. He
took these out of the Temple and burned them. They actually had an Asherah pole in the Temple. He tore down the quarters of the male shrine prostitutes which were actually in the Temple! Josiah went through out the nation tearing down all altars and structures of idol worship. He even went to Samaria and did the same thing there.

Then the King gave the order to celebrate the Passover according to the instructions in the Scriptures. II Kings 23:22 *Not since the days of the judges who led Israel, nor throughout the days of the kings of Israel and the kings of Judah, had any such Passover been observed.*

Why had no such a Passover been observed? Because they had failed to follow the Bible! The people had stopped going by the Scriptures and because no one had sought complete restoration of the true religion like Josiah did.

Josiah went through out the land getting rid of mediums, spiritists, household gods, idols and all other detestable things forbidden by God. II Kings 23:25 *Neither before nor after Josiah was there a king like him who turned to the Lord as he did—with all his heart and with all his soul and with all his strength, in accordance with all the Law of Moses*

**CHAPTER 36 – THE RESTORED CHURCH**

Fred and Charles started a new Church in which they served as co-evangelists. They did not call themselves “pastors,” because, as they
studied it out in the New Testament, they found that the title Pastor applied to the office of bishop or elder in the Bible. There are very specific requirements for the office of bishop laid down in I Timothy chapter 3 and Titus 1. Many ministers who call themselves pastors do not meet these qualifications. They thought of themselves as evangelists or preachers. They decided that the Bible was the only creed they needed. Further, they decided to re-examine every practice and doctrine just as Josiah did and to change those which did not square with the Bible. If they found anything in the Bible they were not practicing, they would begin immediately. For example, Fred Clark decided that it was right to take the Lord’s Supper and, he, himself, presided over the observance the very next Sunday.

For their first worship service they rented a school building and both shared the pulpit. The school auditorium which seated 400 was full and people were standing. Approximately half of the church members from Fred’s and Charles’ former churches left their old denomination and joined Charles and Fred in the Josiah Church. In addition, many people from other churches who witnessed the debate came over and joined with them in their restoration effort.

CHAPTER 37—LISA’S PARENTS SUCCEED

After the debate was over Ted and Lisa met to talk things over concerning their relationship. Ted was ready to get married right away.
Lisa was still under the influence of her parents who were still upset over the debate and blamed Ted for promoting the debate in the first place. Meanwhile, Lisa’s parents rented a house in Lexington so they would have a better chance of keeping Lisa and Ted apart. Lisa had missed most of the debates and was left behind in the restoration and unity progress of the two ministers.

Ted was excited about his conversion and wanted to share the entire experience with supporting Scriptures with Lisa. She was not interested. Ted was very disappointed that the love of his life was not interested in the most important event in his whole life.

After a brief conversation, Lisa left explaining that she needed time to think things over. After this, Ted tried again and again to contact her but without success. Lisa’s parents used every device at their disposal to wreck the romance. They lied about Ted’s phone calls and made up stories about him dating Sharon again. When Ted came to the door to see Lisa, her parents refused to call her to the door and ordered him away. Finally, after many attempts, Ted finally gave up and continued his education at the University of Southern Illinois at Carbondale. Ted was hired on as charter pilot and flight instructor at the Carbondale/Murphysboro Airport.

Meanwhile, Lisa became very depressed thinking that Ted had dropped her. After Ted moved he obtained a new phone number in Illinois.
Lisa called Ted's old numbers, cell and home phone, and received the taped messages that these numbers were no longer in service. She then went by his apartment and found new people living there who did not know Ted and had no idea where he might have moved. Lisa felt abandoned. Why didn't Ted call or come by before he left? She had no idea that he did and that her parents lied to her about it. Lisa stopped eating, stopped going to class and stayed in bed much of the time. Her parents became very concerned and took her to a psychiatrist. Although the psychiatrist was a competent and kind person, he was unable to help her.

After weeks of moping and deep depression, Lisa decided to go to the airport where Ted had worked to see if they knew where he went. She went to the desk and asked if anyone there knew Ted Flynn. The clerk called in one of the flight instructors, Bill Barclay, who had been one of Ted's friends and who had attended the debates. Bill came in and met Lisa. He remembered Ted talking about her and, yes, he knew that Ted was working for a fixed base operator at the Carbondale/Murphysboro Airport in Illinois. He didn't have Ted's new number but he could look up the airport number if Lisa wanted it. Lisa decided not to take the number because she had decided to drive up and surprise Ted. She drove up the following Monday arriving around 5:30 p.m. She walked into the terminal and saw some tables where people were having sandwiches. She saw Ted at one of the tables with a very good looking brunette. She watched for a moment to see what was going on between them. Ted was getting up to
leave and, as he did, he leaned over and gave the girl a kiss on the lips. Lisa was heartbroken, but she had driven this far and was not leaving without talking to Ted. He saw her as he left the table and came over to her.

Lisa asked, “Is that woman you just kissed on the lips your girl friend?”

“Yes, her name is Emily.”

“Why did you leave Lexington without contacting me?”

“Lisa, I made many attempts to contact you. I went to your home and your parents refused to call you. They ordered me away and threatened to call the cops if I returned. When I called your parents hung up on me. I left messages which were never returned. I thought you were through with me.”

Lisa left with tears streaming down her face. Ted followed and tried to talk with her. She got into her car and sped away. She drove back to Lexington that night, arriving very late, she went to bed.

The next morning she arose to the smell of coffee as her parents were preparing breakfast. They didn't know where she had gone and had turned in a missing person report on her. She told them that she went to see Ted and that he had a new girl friend. She asked them about Ted's statement that he left numerous phone messages and that he had been
ordered away from her house by them. Her parents denied it all, but, somehow, Lisa knew they were lying.

After Lisa left, Jesse said, “Maybe we should tell her the truth about Ted.”

“If you do, what are the chances that she will marry Ted?”

“Almost 100% I would think.”

“Then, what are the chances that she will leave our church and join that awful Josiah Church?”

“Almost 100% I think.”

“Is that what you want?” What do you think are her chances of going to heaven if she joins the Josiah Movement?”

“Almost zero, I would think.”

“Then, my dear, what do you advise us to do?”

Jesse, crying, said, “Oh God, forgive us, we have to continue lying to her.”

CHAPTER 38 – SUICIDE

That evening Lisa left about 6 p.m. Lisa called one of her best friends, Sherry because she was so depressed.

“Why are you depressed, Lisa?”
“I just returned from Illinois where Ted is working as a flight instructor. I went up to surprise him and found him kissing another girl.”

“Wow! That louse! If I were you I'd find another boy friend and ditch that worthless bag of trash.”

“It was not his fault, Sherry. My parents had lied to me. Ted tried over and over to contact me and my parents kept him away and didn’t give me the messages left by Ted on our phone for me. I am so depressed that I don’t want to go on living. Everyone I care about has disappointed me.”

“Lisa, let’s get together and talk…” At that point, Lisa hung up her phone. Sometime after that Lisa left and drove out on one of the country roads. She did not return home that night. The next morning, her parents attempted to file another missing person report but the police did not take it seriously as the previous report turned out to be false. At 4 p.m. that day someone found her body. She had driven off a straight road at very high rate of speed straight into a large oak tree. The police discovered that she was not wearing her seat belt at the time of the crash though it probably would not have saved her anyway because of the speed at the time of impact. She had not been drinking. There was no alcohol or drugs of any kind in her blood. It looked like suicide though she left no note. Her parents were devastated. She was their only child. Instead of blaming themselves, they now blamed Ted and the Josiah Church for all their pain and Robert vowed to spend the remainder of his life seeking revenge.
Ted heard about Lisa’s death and attempted to attend the funeral. The funeral director was shown a photograph and ordered to keep Ted out. When Ted arrived, the funeral director explained the demands of the parents so Ted left and returned to Carbondale. This was not the last Ted would hear from Robert Bergman.

Lisa’s death took its toll on Ted. He felt guilty for not making greater effort to contact her in spite of her parents’ interference. He stopped dating Emily and returned to Lexington. His friends tried unsuccessfully to fix him up with dates there, but Ted was in mourning and not interested in dating.

CHAPTER 39—TED STUDIES JOURNALISM

That fall Ted reenrolled in the University of Kentucky at Lexington. He needed to decide on a major. After talking it over with his parents and several friends, he had coffee one morning with Carl. Ted said, “Carl, I am trying to decide on a major. Have you any ideas?”

“Have you considered science? You seem to have talent in that field.”

“That’s a thought; however, it appears to me that the field is packed with evolutionists who spend their lives trying to make science fit their theories. I’ve thought about journalism. I’ve been on the receiving end of unfair and unbalanced stories. I know how powerful news media can be.”
“You’d be a natural for telling the facts and allowing your readers to make up their own minds.”

“Thanks, Carl.”

Ted signed up as journalism major. During his second year he was selected as editor of the student campus newspaper. It became apparent to Ted that more than 80% of the instructors were of the extreme liberal ACLU type and, because of their effectiveness in presenting one sided presentations to their students, most of the students became like them. Ted, remembering the devastation of distorted, one sided news stories about himself, attempted to balance news articles on the upcoming national election for president by presenting the best arguments from both sides in the contest.

As most of the professors continued their lectures which presented only left wing viewpoints on all controversial public policy issues, Ted was amazed at how vulnerable his fellow classmates were to the views of their professors. Instead of teaching critical thinking skills, the professors, with a few notable exceptions, were indoctrinating students and, what was even worse; the students did not seem to be aware of what was happening to them. One of the professors who tried to teach objectivity was two years away from tenure, so he was less passionate about it than he might have otherwise have been.
Ted wrote an editorial critical of CNN’s coverage of the election for President of the United States. The professor who was advisor to the paper fired Ted from his position as editor! Ted talked the situation over with Carl. “Ted, why did you write the story critical of CNN? Did they lie in their broadcast?”

“No, they didn’t outright lie, but their story lacked balance.”

“Why is balance so necessary in your mind?”

“Let’s imagine a controversial story about which ten facts are known. Suppose CNN or any news outlet selects to tell only the five facts which favor one side, how would you feel if you happened to be a party on the losing side of the CNN presentation? It is like most news outlets wants to do your thinking for you. They will tell you the news, and then tell you, by lack of balance, what you should believe about the story.

“I see what you mean. So, you were fired because you criticized CNN’s lack of balance?”

“Yes.”

“It seems to be that a fair and balanced press would be critical for a democracy like ours. How can people make good political decisions at the voting booth if they are brainwashed by the press?”

“Exactly.”
CHAPTER 40—TED CHARGED WITH CONSPIRACY

Meanwhile, one of Ted’s friends saw Dr. Alfonso going into the home of Lisa’s parents. It was rumored around town that Dr. Alfonso was raising money for the defense of Owen Haskel. Dr. Alfonso raised a large amount through his connection with the ACLU. The following Tuesday morning the local press came out with a story that Owen Haskel was now claiming that he was in a conspiracy with Ted Flynn to harm Lisa Bergman. He now claimed that Ted told him where and when she jogged. Meanwhile, Owen Haskel fired his local attorney and announced that he was now represented by one of the nation’s best defense lawyers, F. Lee Nailey. Knowing that he was a high school coach and came from a poor family, people were asking where he found the money to hire such an expensive lawyer.

The local prosecutor, Harold Spinzoa, ordered the authorities to arrest Ted Flynn. They found him at the airport just as he was finishing up the paper work from a charter flight. They put him in handcuffs and took him to jail.

Ted felt like Job in the Bible. Job lost everything, his health, his children and his wealth, but not his wife, but she was less than helpful. She saw his situation and advised him to curse God and die, Job 2:9! At least Job was not arrested, but, on the other hand, Ted still had his health.
Like Job, everyone around Ted, even some of his former class mates, were making false accusations against him.

Ted hired a local lawyer and appeared before the judge for a bail hearing. The judge, knowing Ted was a pilot, made a joke of it in denying bail saying that Ted was a “flight” risk. Both Charles Hoffmiester and Fred Clark came to visit Ted in jail. Since they were not approved chaplains of the jail, they had to talk with Ted by phone through a thick glass and all his conversations were monitored by the prosecution.

After leaving the jail, the two ministers called for a special prayer meeting to pray for Ted as they were both 100% certain that Ted was innocent. There was an overflow crowd and after a thorough briefing by the ministers, there followed an all-night prayer service just for Ted. The following Sunday there was a special contribution for Ted’s defense. The total contributions with pledges totaled over $70,000. Ted was able to hire one of the best lawyers in Lexington, Bruce Preston. Mr. Preston had many friends in the area and connections in the local government in Lexington, both in the prosecutor’s office and among the judiciary. Better yet, Mr. Preston was a recent convert to the Josiah Church. He was a brother and had attended the all-night prayer session for Ted. He too was 100% convinced of Ted’s innocence. He understood the context of opposition from the ACLU and Dr. Alfonso and the hostility from the Bergmans. Much of his work he did behind the scenes.
Ted was sitting in jail reading his Bible. He read the passage in II Kings 6 where the King of Aram sent an entire army to kill the prophet Elisha. Elisha’s servant rose the next morning and looked out to see the city surrounded with the Aramaean army. The servant asked Elisha, “Oh, my lord, what shall we do?” Elisha answered:

"Don’t be afraid,” the prophet answered. “Those who are with us are more than those who are with them.” And Elisha prayed, “O LORD, open his eyes so he may see.” Then the LORD opened the servant’s eyes, and he looked and saw the hills full of horses and chariots (C) of fire all around Elisha.

Then Elisha prayed and the Lord cast blindness on the entire army. Elisha was able to lead them into the city of Samaria where they were in the control of the king of Israel. Their sight was restored and, as Elisha instructed the king of Israel, the Aramaean army was fed and sent back to their home country.

Ted reasoned that, because he was innocent of these false charges and because he had a strong faith in God and his Son, Jesus, the angels were there in Lexington looking out for him. Had not God answered after the all-night prayer by the rather large contribution for Ted’s defense and then provided Ted with the best lawyer in Lexington?

As Ted kept thinking about the Bergmans, the ACLU and Dr. Alfonso and the prosecutor, the words of the prophet kept recycling in Ted’s mind, “Those who are with us are more than those who are with them.” Ted relaxed and received much peace and comfort as he trusted
fully in God to provide in the long run. He remembered other cases where innocent people were falsely accused. The first to pop into his mind was that of Joseph whose older brothers sold him into slavery. He was purchased by Potifer, the Eyyptian officer in charge of Pharaoh’s guard. Potifer’s wife tried to seduce Joseph and, when he refused to have sex with her, she falsely accused him of attempted rape, Genesis 39. He was then thrown into prison. Eventually, God rescued him and made him second in command in Egypt. Ted wondered how Potifer’s wife felt after the man she falsely accused was now ruler of Egypt.

Ted then remembered that false accusations were made against Jesus himself.

Luke 23:2 And they began to accuse him, saying, "We have found this man subverting our nation. He opposes payment of taxes to Caesar and claims to be Christ, a king."

This was a lie! Jesus taught the opposite when asked about Roman taxes, he said “Give to Caesar what is Caesar’s and to God what is God’s, Matthew 22:21.” Why did these Jews make such a false accusation to Pilate, the Roman governor? Was it because they were worried that Casear, the Roman Emperor, would suffer from lack of tax revenue? Hardly, they hated the Roman rulers. They thought this charge, though it was 100% false, would resonate with the Roman governor and lead to Jesus’ death.
What made it worse, because of the seriousness of the charges against him, Ted was housed with the worst offenders, murderers, rapists and such. It was noisy from all the yelling and cursing by the prisoners; this jail was not a pleasant place to be. Ted remembered Job again. To add to all his misery from losing his children, his wealth, his crown and his health, Job was tormented by four “friends” sitting there accusing him of wickedness. Even Job’s wife, as noted earlier, suggested that he curse God and die. They were arguing that Job’s situation was proof of his wickedness. Ted knew that he, like Job, was innocent and longed for the day when this would be over.

Ted had heard the “innocent until proven guilty” phrase tossed around by our legal system, but, so far at least, it had not worked in his life. During his first arrest, the press found him guilty before a trial and thoroughly poisoned the jury pool. Had there been a trial, he doubted that he would end up with an unbiased jury.

Ted knew that there were innocent people serving time for crimes they did not commit in our U.S. prisons. Brandon Moon was charged with a rape which took place in 1987 in El Paso, Texas. He was convicted and served 17 years of 75 year sentence for a rape he did not commit. He was finally cleared in 2005 when the DNA proved him innocent. The state cannot give him back those 17 years.
In another example, Ryan Matthews spend years on death row for a murder he did not commit. On the night of the killing, police stopped a car like that of the real killers, and questioned Ryan and his alleged accomplice, Travis Hayes. Hayes initially testified that he and Ryan were nowhere near the scene of the crime, but, under stiff questioning, he confessed to a crime they did not commit in order to get a lighter sentence. Later DNA evidence proved Ryan innocent. Travis Hayes recanted his false confession. Prosecutors never had any physical evidence linking Ryan to the murder scene. What would it be like to spend years on death row for a murder you know you did not commit?

What lessons did Ted come away with as a result of this experience? Be careful not to make quick judgments, even when there is physical evidence. Potifer was shown physical evidence—Joseph's cloak (a loose outer garment). Previous records do not make a person guilty. Ted had been arrested for the rape and attempted murder of Lisa Bergman. After Lisa came out of the coma, she was able to identify Owen Haskell, the real rapist. Don’t be too quick to believe the authorities. Prosecutors, while most of them are good people who seek truth and justice, have incredibly heavy loads due to all the criminal cases assigned to them and, through the rush to handle such a large work load, they sometimes make mistakes. More importantly, don’t get discouraged. Remember, Joseph, Job, Ryan Matthews, and Brandon Moon were eventually exonerated. Ted remembered the Scripture:
Romans 8:28 *And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose.*

As with Joseph, while in prison, and with Ryan, while on death row, be patient and refuse to judge in the short run, if all else fails, God’s people have a great reward waiting after this life.

Luke 6:22-23 *Blessed are you when men hate you, when they exclude you and insult you and reject your name as evil, because of the Son of Man. "Rejoice in that day and leap for joy, because great is your reward in heaven. For that is how their fathers treated the prophets.*

After reading this, Ted went from joylessness to joyfulness. His face changed from dark gloom to bright happiness and he became an encourager to his fellow prisoners, and more importantly, to himself.

CHAPTER 41 THE GUARDIAN ANGELS MEET

The angels met in the Third Heaven to discuss the trials and persecution Ted Flynn had endured. Gabriel gave them a short summary of the persecutions Ted Flynn was patiently enduring.

“FELLOW ANGELS AND SERVANTS OF GOD, I HAVE CALLED YOU TOGETHER FOR A MOST IMPORTANT MISSION. TED FLYNN WAS FALSELY ACCUSED BY PROFESSOR ALFONSO AND, IF IT HAD NOT BEEN FOR US, HE WOULD HAVE BEEN EXPELLED FROM THE UNIVERSITY. AFTER THAT, DUE TO THE PROFESSOR’S INFLUENCE, HE WAS FALSELY ACCUSED OF THE ATTEMPTED MURDER OF LISA.
BERGMAN, HIS GIRL FRIEND. HAD SHE DIED THEN, THERE IS LITTLE DOUBT THAT TED WOULD HAVE BEEN CONVICTED. NOW, HE IS IN COURT AGAIN, ACCUSED OF CONSPIRACY TO RAPE AND MURDER. THE CHARGES ARE FALSE. EVEN JOB HAD RESPIRE AFTER A WHILE. THIS YOUNG MAN HAS SUFFERED ENOUGH. I AM APPOINTING TWELVE OF YOU TO GO TO LEXINGTON, KENTUCKY NOW AND INTERVENE IN TED’S BEHALF.” The twelve were sent off promptly to their assignment.

God sometimes works behind the scenes. Fred Clark started a prison ministry in Blackburn Correctional Complex in Lexington. It is a minimum security prison with just under 600 inmates. Meanwhile, incredible as it was, Dr. Alfonso and his friends in the ACLU were able to persuade the authorities to move Owen Haskel to that prison. Because he was a model prisoner and helped organize athletic activities, Owen Haskel was given special privileges at the prison. When Fred Clark started coming over every Thursday for worship services, Owen started attending. His conscience was bothering him because, to help himself, he had lied and put an innocent man in prison.

Meanwhile the prosecutor was ready to bring Ted Flynn to trial. Mr. Spinzoa was a first cousin to Dr. Thomas Alfonso and was also a member of the ACLU along with his cousin Thomas. Thomas made sure that all the resources of the ACLU legal staff were available to the prosecution in this
case. They again resurrected the story of the missing girl in Ted Flynn’s hometown and insinuated that he might be the murderer. They even found cases of missing girls in nearby cities and, and raised questions about the possibility that Ted was involved with these cases as well. The local press reported it as “reliable sources suggest,” and “authorities suspect” Ted Flynn in this girl’s disappearance. The jury pool was thoroughly poisoned by the time Ted’s trial was about to open.

The local paper, The Post, resurrected all the previous stories about Ted and Sharon and gave them as evidence of Ted’s guilt. How did he find Lisa Bergman at all from an airplane in the dense woods and how did he find her so quickly? He must have known exactly where to fly! He must have known before he took off because Owen Haskell told him where to look. The fixed base operator at Bluegrass Airport was interviewed as an expert and he confirmed the accusations about the difficulty of spotting a body from the air in that location. Every day the Post, kept the story alive with interviews with an assortment of people including other pilots.

The Post gave a new spin to Lisa Bergman’s “suicide.” Remember the girl riding along with Ted Flynn in his airplane when he supposedly found Lisa Bergman? The Post made accusations by merely asking questions. Where was Sharon Miller at the time Lisa Bergman died in that “car accident?” Was it an accident? Remember, Sharon Miller was insanely jealous of Lisa Bergman. Did the police thoroughly investigate Lisa
Bergman’s death? Could it have been homicide instead of suicide? Police say there was no suicide note. One would expect a suicide note if it really was suicide. Again CNN picked the story up and ran it with the Ms. Peggy Corkran spin and, again, Ms. Cockran was interviewed by a CNN reporter.

The *Post* did not allow the truth to get in their way when spinning a news story. Sharon and Ted had never dated. Sharon had a boy friend all along and, at the time of Lisa’s death, she was engaged to be married to her boy friend, Geoffrey Osborn. The fact that Sharon and Geoffrey were visiting Geoffrey’s parents in Memphis, Tennessee at the time of Lisa Bergman’s death was not reported by the *Post*. The fact that Ted was living in Carbondale, Illinois and had no contact with Sharon since he left college—all this information was easily available if an inquiring reporter had been interested. Thankfully, Fox Cable News was interested and did present that information in their news reports.

CNN picked up the story and ran it with the same spin as was used by the *Post*. In fact, the chief reporter for the paper, Ms. Peggy Corkran, was interviewed by CNN. Fox cable news also ran the story, but, living up to their motto, “Fair and Balanced,” they sent in a reporter to interview Ted and his lawyer, and presented both sides of the story. Unfortunately, most of the people in Lexington were watching a popular sports event that night and missed the Fox News reports and, unfortunately, most of these same people got their news from one source, the *Post*. 
Meanwhile, Ted's brothers in the Josiah Church were fervently praying for Ted. God was listening.

Fund raising had continued among Ted’s friends in the Josiah Church and one wealthy contributor had given $50,000.00 for Ted’s defense. Bruce Preston had wisely used that money to provide the best defense possible. This too was leaked to the press and the Post ran stories comparing Ted’s defense team with OJ's “Dream Team,” suggesting that enough money could, in fact, get guilty people off. Innocent jury verdicts could be bought! Editorials were written that justice should not be up for sale in Lexington, Kentucky.

Bruce Preston brought in expert witnesses from anywhere and everywhere if there was any chance they could help Ted’s case. A dummy was placed in the same place where Lisa Bergman was left to die and covered the same way news photographs showed her body being covered. Then two professional pilots were hired to go look for the body given only the information Ted had when he and Sharon were looking for Lisa. The two pilots found the dummy in less than an hour and had returned to Bluegrass Airport. They flew a Cessna 152, the very same airplane that Ted had rented when he and Sharon Miller found her in the first place.

CHAPTER 42 JURY SELECTION

The first day of the trial arrived and the first task was jury selection. The prosecution was led by Harold Spinzoa and Ted’s defense
lawyer was, of course, Bruce Preston. Bruce Preston was most concerned about the possible jury poisoning from the press, so many of his questions were about the sources the prospective juror used to get his or her news. If they watched CNN and Fox Cable news, Mr. Preston had no problem with them. If they watched CNN only and read the Post, he used his legal right to reject them. He rejected three prospective jurors for this exact reason, though he never stated this publicly. Harold Spinzoa rejected three prospective jurors because they belonged to the Josiah Church, though he never stated his reasons publicly. After three days, a jury of 12 jurors with two alternates was seated and the trial began.

Meanwhile, Fred Clark continued his Thursday visits to the Blackburn Correctional Complex in Lexington, Kentucky. Owen Haskell listened intently as Fred preached the gospel of forgiveness. Fred read

Romans 5:1 Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,

Fred repeated the lesson he learned from Charles Hoffmiester about the meaning of “justified,”--just as if I’d never sinned! What a wonderful blessing! “Though some of you have murdered, raped, robbed, and a long list of other sins,” Fred said, “once you are born again, God sees you as though you never did these crimes in the first place! Yes, the legal system still sees you as a criminal and you still have to serve out your sentences, but in God’s eyes you are now clean. Think how much more important God’s view of us is than man’s view of us.”
Owen Haskell was Fred’s most attentive listener. He asked to meet with him privately to study the Bible. They met several times during the weeks preceding the trail. Fred studied out sin and the importance of true repentance and confession of sins. He read the story of Zacchaeus who, because he was short, had to climb a tree in order to see Jesus:

Luke 19:8 *But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord, “Look, Lord! Here and now I give half of my possessions to the poor, and if I have cheated anybody out of anything, I will pay back four times the amount.”*  

Zacchaeus’ repentance caused him to make restitution and do all in his power to make things right.

CHAPTER 43  THE TRIAL STARTS

Harold Spinzoa read his opening statement to the jury and gave full explanations to his theories about what happened.

“Ladies and gentlemen of the jury, thank you for performing your civic duties by appearing here today to bring justice to Lisa Bergman. Though Ted Flynn eluded us at first, the law has caught up with him. He is just as guilty of the rape and the attempted murder of Lisa Bergman as if he had done it himself because he was in conspiracy with others to commit this cruel and ungodly act. It is a repeat of the old triangle scenario. He was dating Sharon Miller while seeing Lisa Bergman. Sharon was the jealous girl who would not tolerate competition. She ordered him to kill Lisa. Ted Flynn
could not bring himself to do this evil act himself for whatever reason, but he was willing to set her up for someone else to do the rape and murder. This he arranged with Owen Haskell who is now serving time for this crime. Mr. Haskell himself will appear as a witness to this conspiracy. Ted Flynn knew Lisa Bergman's habits and told Owen Haskell where and when to find her jogging through a dense woods."

“Ted Flynn was brought up on attempted murder charges before, but the charges were dropped when Lisa regained consciousness. She remembered Owen Haskell as her attacker, but, unfortunately, did not realize Ted’s part in the crime. Since then much new evidence of Mr. Flynn's guilt has been uncovered. No doubt, Lisa Bergman’s recent death resulted from a sequence of events which began with this crime. We are not certain if her recent death was a suicide or a homicide. That is still under investigation. Nevertheless, if Sharon Miller and Ted Flynn had not entered Lisa’s life, she would still be alive today and pursuing a very successful academic career. She was the only child of Robert and Jesse Bergman. We all lose when people like her are lost. Thank you.”

Harold Spinzoa sat down and Bruce Preston gave his introductory statement to the jury.

“Ladies and gentlemen, if Ted Flynn did any of the things charged by the prosecution, I would not be here defending him. The only hard evidence the prosecution has in this case is the testimony of one convict,
Owen Haskell, who is lying to help himself. We will show that Owen Haskell only agreed to testify against Ted Flynn after a very large defense fund was set up for his appeals. Ted Flynn is a Christian man who has shown his loyalty to God and his fellow man all his life. Before these charges, he had a perfectly clean legal record, not even a speeding ticket. Furthermore, Ted Flynn never had a romantic relationship with Sharon Miller and the prosecution cannot offer any hard evidence to the contrary. Thank you.”

Bruce Preston sat down.

The judge asked the prosecution to call his first witness.

Harold Spinzoa said, “The prosecution calls Trev Ponder.”

Trev Ponder took the stand and was sworn in.

“Please state your name and occupation for the jury.”

“I am Trev Ponder. I am a commercial pilot and a flight instructor for Cabell Aviation at Bluegrass Airport.”

“Have you experience with flights over the area where Lisa Bergman was found?”

“Yes, I have 8,350 hours of flying time in my log book and more than half of it is in flights 25 miles or less from Bluegrass Airport.”
“Ted Flynn and his girlfriend, Sharon Miller, would like us to believe that they flew out and spotted Lisa’s body from the air in less than an hour. In your professional experience, does that seem likely?”

“No. I am very familiar with that exact area. It is a dense woods and from a fast moving airplane it would be near impossible to see her even if you knew where to look.”

Thank you. Your Honor, I have no more questions for this witness.

Bruce Preston asked, “What kind of flying have you done that keeps you within 25 miles of Bluegrass for over 4,000 hours?”

Ponder answered, “Flight instruction mostly in single engine planes.”

Does Cabell aviation have a designated ‘practice area’ for you to use for these training maneuvers?

“Yes.”

Spinzoa said, “Objection, Your Honor, what has this to do with the case?”

Preston said, “Your Honor, if the prosecution wants to present this pilot as a expert of the area where Lisa was left to die, we’d like to know just how familiar he really was with this exact area.”

Judge said, “Objection overruled.”
Preston continued, “Is that ‘practice area’ near where Lisa was found?”

“No.”

How far is that practice area from the spot where Lisa was attacked?”

“Lisa was found west of Bluegrass and our practice area is 13 miles due east of the airport. I’d say about 18 miles apart.”

Do you follow your company’s rules and use that practice area for your training maneuvers?”

“Yes.”

“Can you recall a single time since Lisa’s attack that you flew to the spot where she was found and looked down into those particular woods?

“No.”

“The defense has no more questions for this witness.”

The Judge then said, “Mr. Spinzoa, call your next witness.”

“The prosecution calls Robert Bergman.”

Robert Bergman was sworn in. He had been thoroughly prepared by Spinzoa and lawyers from ACLU.

Spinzoa: Mr. Bergman, are you the father of late Lisa Bergman?

Bergman: “Yes.”
Spinzoa: Can you relate to us all the relevant data you have concerning the romantic relationships, if any that existed between Lisa, your daughter and Ted Flynn and Sharon Miller?”

Robert Bergman weeps as he answers, “My daughter was in love with Ted Flynn. Unfortunately, one woman was not enough for Mr. Flynn. He was also seeing the jealous Sharon Miller.”

Preston: “Objection.”

Judge: “Objection overruled.”

Bergman: Jesse, my wife, and I knew our daughter very well. She confided in her mother and me openly. We knew she found out about his other girl friend, Sharon Miller, and she was heartbroken. We advised her to stop seeing Mr. Flynn.

Spinzoa said, “Your Honor, I have no other questions for this witness.

Preston then questioned the witness.

Mr. Bergman, you have testified that there was a romantic relationship between Ted Flynn and Sharon Miller. Did you ever see them together?

Bergman: “No.”

Preston: “What are your feelings toward Ted Flynn?”
Spinzoa: “Objection, what has that got to do with the case?”

Preston: “Your honor, we have the right to examine the bias of this witness.”

Judge: “Overruled. Mr. Bergman, you may answer.”

Bergman: “We are sad that he was untrue to our daughter, but, other than that, we had nothing against Mr. Flynn until he had our daughter murdered.”

Preston: “What proof do you have that Ted Flynn was in a conspiracy to murder your daughter other than the alleged statement of Owen Haskell?”

Bergman: “None.”

Preston: “How did you feel about Ted Flynn’s role in starting the religious debate which sparked the Josiah Church?”

Bergman: “We don’t agree with that church, but we do believe in freedom of religion. If Mr. Flynn likes the Josiah Church that is his business.”

Preston: “Did you walk out of the debate in anger?”

Bergman: “I walked out because it was boring.”

Preston: “You were not angry?”
Bergman: “No.”

Preston: “Did you not tell your friends in the Lion’s Club that you hated the movement and that you hated Ted Flynn for his part in it? By-the-way, Mr. Bergman, I have two witnesses here in court today who are prepared to testify about what they heard you say.”

Mr. Bergman’s face turned red as he stuttered, “No, no, ma, ma, may, maybe I said something like that at the moment, but I didn’t really mean it.”

Preston: “I have no other questions for this witness.”

Spinzoa called Dr. Alfonso.

Spinzoa: “Dr. Alfonso, state your name and your profession for the jury.”

Dr. Alfonso: “My name is Dr. Thomas Alfonso and I am a professor of science at the University of Kentucky.”

Spinzoa: “How did you come to know Mr. Flynn?”

Dr. Alfonso: “He was a student in my first year biology class. Mr. Flynn caused more discipline problems in my class than any student in my 29 years of teaching.”

Spinzoa: “How so?”
Dr. Alfonso: “He handed out religious literature which I specifically forbade. I did so, not because I am against religion, but because we have a cherished principle of separation of church and state.”

Preston: “Objection, this has nothing to do with the charges against my client.”

Judge: “Objection overruled. Dr. Alfonso, you may continue.”

Alfonso: “I was suspicious of Mr. Flynn after I read about the missing girl in his home town and the possibility that he was the one who took her.”

Preston: “Objection. Side bar, your honor.”

Side bar:

Preston: “Your honor, I demand a mistrial.”
Judge: “I will instruct the jury to disregard the statement.”
Preston: “Your honor, we can’t un-ring the bell. The jury heard that and they cannot forget it.”

Judge: “Stand back, the trial will continue.”
Judge: “The jury will disregard the last statement and it will be stricken from the record.”

Spinzoa: “Dr. Alfonso, you have had direct confrontations with Mr. Flynn, do you think he is capable of conspiracy to murder?”

Preston: “Objection, Dr. Alfonso is not a psychiatrist.”
Judge: “Counselor, re-phrase your question.”

Spinzoa: “In your dealings with Ted Flynn, did you see evidence of hate and hostility?”

Alfonso: “Yes.”

Spinzoa: “No more questions for this witness.”

Preston: “Dr. Alfonso, did you witness my client handing out religious literature which you forbade him to hand out?”

Dr. Alfonso: “No.”

Preston: “Then how did you know about it?”

Dr. Alfonso: “One of my students, Demitri Hoppi told me.”

Preston: “So, you only have “hear say” evidence.”

Dr. Alfonso: “Demitri Hoppi is a most trustworthy student.”

Preston: “You said that you saw evidence of hostility and hate in my client. Against whom was that hostility and hate directed?”

Alfonso: “Me.”

Preston: “Dr. Alfonso have you ever lied about my client before today?”

Spinzoa: “Objection.”
Judge: “Objection sustained.”

Preston: “I’ll re-phrase. Dr. Alfonso, when you lodged charges against my client with the University, were those charges true, and remember, you are under oath.”

Dr. Alfonso: (Face fiery red again) “There were some misunderstandings, I think.”

Preston: To be specific, Dr. Alfonso, did you charge my client with calling you a “fool?” (Sara Preston, the writer for Student Affairs who published the Alfonso lectures, is the daughter of Bruce Preston, so he knew from his daughter first hand all about the Alfonso/Flynn controversy.)

Alfonso: “Yes.”

Preston: “Sir was that statement true?”

Alfonso: (Squirming in his seat and not wanting to go to jail for perjury) “No, but you don’t understand the situation.”

Preston: “I have two more questions for you, Dr. Alfonso, did you help raise money for Owen Haskell’s defense?”

Spinzoa: “Objection.”

Judge: “Objection overruled. Answer the question, Dr. Alfonso.”

Alfonso. “Yes, I believe that every man deserves a fair defense.”
Preston: “Did you also persuade the ACLU to provide aid to Mr. Haskell.”

Alfonso. “Yes.”

Preston: “No more questions.”

Spinzoa: “The prosecution calls Sharon Miller to the stand.”

Spinzoa: “Please state your name and tell us how you came to know Ted Flynn.”

Miller: “My name is Sharon Miller and I met Ted at the University.”

Spinzoa: “When Lisa Bergman was missing, did you participate in the search?”

Miller: “Yes.”

Spinzoa: “Please describe what happened.”

Miller: “I saw Ted and he told me that Lisa Bergman was missing and that he was going to make an aerial search for her and invited me to go along saying that four eyes were better than two.”

Spinzoa: “That must have been very romantic.”

Preston: “Is there a question?”

Spinzoa: “I have no further questions of this witness.”
Preston: “Miss Miller, the prosecution has spun a theory that you and Ted are sweethearts and that you drove him to have Lisa murdered because she was a romantic rival, and that it almost succeeded. Are you and Ted lovers or have you ever been romantically involved in any way?”

Miller: “Absolutely not. I’ve had the same boyfriend for the last four years, Bill Osborn, and we are engaged to be married.”

Preston: “Other than the one plane ride, have you ever done anything else with Ted Flynn which might give folks the idea that you were dating?”

Miller: “No. I’m in love with Bill and have absolutely no interest in any other man.”

Preston: “You knew that Lisa and Ted were dating. How did you feel about that?”

Miller: “I only knew them by sharing a biology class under Dr. Alfonso with them. Outside of that and the one plane ride, I had nothing to do with either of them. My phone records will show that I never ever called either of them and they never called me.”

Preston: “Thank you, no more questions.”

Judge: “It is late and we will continue this trial tomorrow at 9:00 a.m. The jury is instructed to discuss this case with no one and you are instructed to not watch news coverage of this trial.”
Meanwhile, Fred Clark continued his prison ministry at Blackburn where Owen Haskell was housed. The day the trial started, a Thursday, Fred was at Blackburn and his sermon that day was on conscience. He pointed out that a conscience was a gift of God to guide our lives and, when we deliberately violate that conscience, we suffer mightily under God’s hand of discipline.

An illustration of this very thing came to light when Jack Wendell Pursel walked into the Waterloo, Iowa police station and confessed to murdering Richard Huntbach, 85 and his wife Goldie, 77 thirty years ago. Though the law was not able to find and convict him, his conscience never let up. He was tormented for 30 years until he finally walked into that police station and confessed. In a similar situation Pedro Hernandez in New York confessed to killing a six year old boy, Etan Patz 33 years ago. According to authorities, Mr. Hernandez was very emotional as he confessed to the murder.

We will not feel good about ourselves regardless of how well we do otherwise. He went on to point out that, if one keeps on violating that conscience, he can sear it over like a deep scar from a severe burn. With a burn, the nerve cells in the skin are killed so that one is no longer sensitive to pain. In the same way, when one continually violates that conscience, it will sear over until it is impossible for him to repent. Owen Haskell listened attentively, (I Timothy 4:1-4).
After the service, Owen asked to speak privately with Fred. By this time Fred had been recognized as one of the chaplains for the prison and was able to take Owen to a private room for consultation.

Owen asked, “Reverend Clark…” Fred interrupted Owen and explained that he and ministers in the Josiah Church had dropped all titles and went by first names just like everybody else. “Just call me Fred,” he said.

“Okay, I have something really important to share with you. I was the one who attacked Lisa Bergman. I had been looking at porn on the web for years and it seemed less and less satisfying. I then got into hard porn involved with violence. When I first started looking at this stuff, I would never in a million years have thought that I would have harmed another person. I am so sorry for the pain I caused her and her family and friends.”

“What’s equally as bad is that I have lied and now an innocent man in on trial because of my lie. Dr. Alfonso came to me and promised to raise $150,000 for my appeals if I would lie and say that Ted Flynn was in a conspiracy with me to attack and murder Lisa Bergman. I was just thinking of myself at the time. My thinking then was, why not share the blame? Now, since I have been reading the Bible and listening to your sermons, I am overwhelmed with guilt. It seems that my conscience has
been resurrected and keeps me awake at night asking what kind of human being am I.

Fred replied, “Owen, we can hide nothing from God. The first step to healing is confessing sins to other Christians. Then, like Zacchaeus, do all in your power to make things right.” Fred then reread to Owen a part of the story of Zacchaeus from the New Testament:

Luke 19: 8-10 But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord, "Look, Lord! Here and now I give half of my possessions to the poor, and if I have cheated anybody out of anything, I will pay back four times the amount."

Owen thanked Fred and went back to his cell. Fred got down on his knees and thanked God for what God was doing in Owen Haskell’s heart.

The trail began sharply at 9:00 a.m. Friday morning.

Spinzoa said, “The prosecution calls Owen Haskell.”

Owen Haskell came to the witness stand and was sworn in. Of course, he was dressed in a nice suit and not his prison uniform. There was tenseness in the courtroom. The entire case could be decided by the testimony of this witness.

Spinzoa began his questioning, “Please state your name and your place of residence.”
“I am Owen Haskell and I am in Blackburn Correctional Complex serving a twenty year term for the rape and attempted murder of Lisa Bergman.”

“Would you explain to the jury how Ted Flynn conspired with you for the attack on Lisa Bergman?”

“Do you want the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth as my oath just stated?”

“Of course, what kind of question is that?”

“I don’t want to be interrupted until I finish.”

“Please continue with the whole truth and nothing but the truth.”

“Ted Flynn did not conspire with me to attack Lisa Bergman. I acted alone. I had been on hard porn for a long time and I just allowed my lust to get out of control. I don’t even know Ted Flynn and I’ve never talked with him in my life.”

At this point there were gasps of shock and unbelief among the people siding with the prosecution. Dr. Alfonso was visibly upset and staring holes in the witness.

Spinzoa, flabbergasted asked, “Do you realize, Mr. Haskell that this is contradictory to your testimony you gave the police and my office and that you have perjured yourself?”
“You are correct, Mr. Spinzoa, and I do apologize. Let me explain. Two months ago Dr. Alfonso came to visit me in prison and offered to raise $150,000 for my defense if I would lie and say that Ted Flynn conspired with me for the attack on Lisa Bergman.”

Alfonso stood up and yelled, “You, sir, are a liar!”

The Judge said, “Bailiff, please take Dr. Alfonso into custody and remove him from the court room. Mr. Haskell please continue.”

“Dr. Alfonso came through with his promise. You can check with my bank. $150,000 was deposited in my account the following week.”

“Why did you undergo this change of heart, Mr. Haskell?”

“For some time now I’ve been attending the worship services conducted by the prison chaplain, Fred Clark. His sermons revived my conscience and I came under conviction for my crimes. I can’t undo what I did to Lisa Bergman, but I can undo my false charges against Ted Flynn and that is exactly what I am doing now. I hope that he and God will forgive me.”

Ted’s defense lawyer, Preston said, “Your honor, in view of this testimony, I request that all charges against my client, Ted Flynn, be dropped.”

The Judge answered, “So ordered. Mr. Flynn, you are free to go.”
The courtroom broke into a joyous celebration by Ted’s supporters and the Jury gave him a standing applause. Dr. Alfonso was arrested and charged with tampering with a witness. The University suspended him with pay until he could receive a hearing. The University president was furious. The ACLU lawyers were scampering to cover their own behinds and left Dr. Alfonso to choke in the chaos he had helped to create.

CHAPTER 44—THE TRIAL INSPIRES SERMONS

The Josiah people held a special thanksgiving service that evening to thank God for his providence in freeing Ted from all charges. The building was full to the point that there was no standing room. The sound people set a speaker outside the building for those who were not able to get inside. Fred gave a talk in which he compared Ted Flynn’s life with that of Joseph in the Old Testament. Joseph was sold into slavery by his wicked brothers. While a slave, false charges were brought against Joseph just as there had been against Ted Flynn. Ultimately, God rescued both of them.

The following Sunday, Charles Hoffmiester, Fred’s partner in leading the Josiah Church in Lexington, preached on God’s providence as illustrated in the book of Esther, a book of the Bible from the Old Testament and, by comparison, pointed out the obvious ways God worked to save Ted as he had the Jews in Esther’s day.

Charles’ summary of the book of Esther:
King Xerxes of the Persian Empire had deposed his Queen for disobedience. His nobles suggested a search throughout the 120 provinces for a new queen to replace her. Esther, a Jew, was chosen, though she did not at that time disclose her heritage. The King’s chief noble, Haman, developed a hatred for Mordecai, Esther's uncle who raised her, and, when he learned that he was also a Jew, he generalized that hatred and decided to kill all the Jews in the 120 provinces of the Persian Empire. He gave the King a bad report about the Jews and asked him for permission to kill all of them on a certain day (Which day Haman had determined by casting lots). Haman then offered to put 10,000 talents of silver into the royal treasury to help pay for this slaughter. The King agreed to the slaughter of the Jews, but told Haman to keep his money. Xerxes then signed a royal decree which could not be revoked even by the King himself. Things looked hopeless for the Jews.

Mordecai had reared Esther when both her parents died. Before this all happened, Mordecai had overheard two of the King’s guards plotting to assassinate Xerxes. He reported it to Esther and she told the King. The men were convicted and hanged. It was all recorded in their history books.

Meanwhile, Mordecai sent word to Esther to go to the king and beg for mercy. Esther replied that she had not been sent for by the king for 30 days and to go into the king’s presence without prior permission was punishable
by death. The only exception was if the king held out the golden scepter. Mordecai’s response is recorded in:

Esther 4:13-14 he sent back this answer: “Do not think that because you are in the king’s house you alone of all the Jews will escape. For if you remain silent at this time, relief and deliverance for the Jews will arise from another place, but you and your father’s family will perish. And who knows but that you have come to royal position for such a time as this?”

Esther asked Mordecai to gather all the Jews in Susa and fast as would she and her maids. Then she said, if I die, I die. Three days later she went to the king uninvited and he held out the golden scepter. He asked for her request and said that it would be fulfilled up to half of his kingdom. She invited the king and Haman to a banquet she would prepare. They came and again the king asked her about her request. She invited them to a banquet the second night and promised the king that she would reveal her request then.

Haman’s hatred for Mordecai was so strong that he wanted to kill him ahead of time. He constructed a 75 foot gallows on which to hang Mordecai. Then he departed for the palace to request permission from the King to hang Mordecai. The night preceding this event, the King could not sleep so he ordered that his servants bring in the history books and read to him. They read the story of how Mordecai saved his life by uncovering the conspiracy to assassinate him. The King asked what had been done to reward this man for saving his life. He learned that nothing had been done. Then, just as the King was pondering how to honor Mordecai, Haman
entered intending to ask the King’s permission to hang Mordecai (God’s providence and timing). The King spoke first and asked how he might honor someone with whom he was well pleased. Haman thought to himself, “Now who is there that the King would honor more than me?” Haman suggested that the King have a royal robe he had worn be placed on this individual and that the horse the King had ridden be brought and that the King’s most noble prince lead that person through the city proclaiming this is what is to be done for the man the King delights to honor.

Xerxes liked the idea and ordered Haman himself to do just this for Mordecai. Does God have a sense of humor? Haman, of course, had to do it, but after it was over Haman rushed home with his head covered in great distress. Just then the men came to rush Haman off to the Queen’s second banquet.

During this banquet, Esther told the King the whole story of how the wicked Haman was going to destroy her and all the Jews. The King left in a rage for the palace garden. Meanwhile Haman fell on the couch where Esther was to plead for his life. The King came back in thinking Haman was molesting her and ordered Haman to be hanged on the Gallows he had prepared for Mordecai. The King then allowed Mordecai to write a second order which allowed the Jews to defend themselves on the appointed day
on which they were to be slaughtered. On that day and the one following the Jews killed 75,000 of their most bitter enemies.

What is the main lesson in the story? Even though God is not mentioned in the whole book, one would have to be blind to fail to see God’s providence throughout the book. What if some other woman had been chosen as queen? Esther would not have been there to save the day. What if Mordecai had not over heard the plot to assassinate Xerxes? What if this story had not been recorded in the first place? What if the King had slept well the night before Haman came in to ask for Mordecai’s hanging? What if the readers had read to the king some other place in the history books instead of the place where Mordecai saved the King’s life? What if Mordecai had already been rewarded? What if the King had not held out the golden scepter to Esther? What if Haman had selected an earlier date to kill the Jews and on and on? We see God’s providence throughout the book.

Charles went on in his sermon to point out all the ways God’s providence worked to free Ted. What if he had fallen for Sharon Miller instead of Lisa Bergman? What if there had not been a fund raiser for Ted’s defense fund? What if he had not obtained the services of Bruce Preston, the best lawyer in Lexington? What if Fred Clark had gone to some other prison to do his ministry? Owen Haskell was not even in Blackburn Correctional Complex when Fred first started ministering there. What if
Owen Haskell had not been moved there? That prison was not intended to house violent criminals, yet, because of Dr. Alfonso and his friends, Owen was moved there anyway. If moved there, what if Owen Haskell had not decided to attend the services where Fred preached? With the case appearing hopeless, what if Ted had pleaded guilty just to get a shorter sentence? God was there just as he was with Esther and the Jews.”

The song leader started a praise and thanksgiving song to thank God for his wonderful providence in Ted’s behalf. There were tears of joy in many eyes as the congregation entered into whole-hearted praise to God!

The news coverage of Ted’s acquittal was heavily influenced by the bias of the news media. The Post ran a short story on page 13 giving the bare facts that all charges were dropped against Ted and that Dr. Alfonso had been arrested. CNN failed to cover the story even though they had a reporter and a camera at the trial. Fox cable news also had a reporter and a camera at the trial and they gave full coverage to the trial in their prime news hour. They not only recorded the trial testimony of Owen Haskell and the thanksgiving service hosted by the Josiah Church, in their effort to be, “fair and balanced,” they tried to interview Mr. Spinzoa and Dr Alfonso. Both refused to speak to the reporter.

Ted re-enrolled in the University of Kentucky at Lexington to continue working on his degree in journalism. To help with his expenses,
he took a part time job at Bluegrass Airport working for Cabell Aviation. He did flight instruction and some charter work.

CHAPTER 45—ATTEMPTED MURDER

Professor Thomas Alfonso was filled with hate for Ted Flynn, the Josiah Movement, and all other Christians and longed for opportunities for revenge. He was most like Saul of Tarsus as described in Acts 9:1

Meanwhile, Saul was still breathing out murderous threats against the Lord’s disciples. He went to the high priest and asked him for letters to the synagogues in Damascus, so that if he found any there who belonged to the Way, whether men or women, he might take them as prisoners to Jerusalem.

Dr. Alfonso was brought up on charges of tampering with a witness in regard to Owen Haskell and his testimony against Ted Flynn. The defense attorney argued that it was the testimony of a convicted felon against the testimony of a highly respected university professor. He persuaded the judge to throw out the case against Dr. Alfonso.

The President of the University wanted Dr. Alfonso fired, but the professor had tenure. The discipline committee held a hearing, but after his case was thrown out of court, they declined to take action so Dr. Alfonso retained his job at the University. His student, Demitri Hoppi, continued to take all the courses he could under him and always received top grades. He kept the professor informed as to Ted’s activities and he told him about Ted’s new job at Bluegrass Airport.
Thomas asked, “Demitri, how would you feel if Ted Flynn’s plane just happened to crash.”

Demitri answered, “I would throw a party just for the two of us.”

“Demitri, I have some influence at the airport. Suppose I could get you a job fueling planes, would you be interested?”

“How would that help us?”

“Must I do all the thinking? You will be there. Surely you can think of something, can’t you?”

“I suppose so.”

Demitri accepted the challenge. Two weeks later Demitri was fueling planes for Cabell Aviation.

Ted was flying cargo in an old DC-3 which burned gasoline, not jet fuel.

Demitri checked the schedule in the office and learned that Ted was scheduled to fly cargo from Lexington to Atlanta the next morning, departing at 6:00 a.m. He called Tom and shared an idea. (Demitri now felt bold enough to call the professor by his first name.)

“Tom, Ted Flynn is scheduled to fly a DC-3 to Atlanta at 6:00 a.m. in the morning.”
“So?”

“So, the DC-3 burns gasoline, what if I, by mistake, fueled it with jet fuel.”

“Demitri, see, I told you that you were capable of thinking of some plan on your own. Do it.”

Demitri was working on the fuel truck that evening. The owner, knowing that Demitri was new on the job, warned him that the DC-3 used gasoline, not jet fuel. Demitri, after receiving this warning from his boss, was worried that he might be charged with murder during the investigation that was certain to follow the crash. He called Thomas and discussed the problem with him.

“Thomas, there is a new development. I cannot risk doing it.”

“What new development?”

‘Mr. Cabell, the owner, knowing that I am new on the job, specifically warned me that the DC-3 burned gasoline and to be certain that I did not fuel it with jet fuel.”

“Demitri, must I do all the thinking for you? Were there not two men hired to fuel planes. The other guy is green too. Tell him to put jet fuel in the DC-3.”
“If this plane crashes, there will be a thorough investigation. I don’t want to be charged with conspiracy to murder. We have to come up with a safer plan.”

“Demitri, if you are charged, I will provide you a splendid defense with the best lawyers.”

“No, I don’t want to take the risk.”

“If you don’t do it, you are certain to fail in every class you are taking from me and I can ruin your future academic career.”

Demitri, feeling the wrath of this powerful doctor, meekly submitted and proceeded with the plan. He fueled Cessnas with the gasoline truck and directed his buddy to take the jet fuel truck and fuel the DC-3.

The next morning at 0500 local time, Ted was on the ramp pre-flighting the DC-3 for his trip to Atlanta Hartsfield. Ted was accompanied by one of the young flight instructors who wanted the experience in the DC-3. The two finished checking out the airplane and started the large radial engines. They came alive with the usual smoke and noise and were cleared to taxi out to runway 22, the one the Comair jet should have used, but didn’t. After the run-up, which seemed normal, Ted started the takeoff run. If you notice in the photograph, the airplane’s third wheel is on the tail, so the takeoff starts with the airplane’s tail wheel on the runway with
the pitch of the nose rather high. After the plane gains enough speed, the pilot uses the elevator to lift the tail while the main wheels remain on the ground until the airplane has enough speed to fly on one engine in case of engine failure in either engine. When Ted lifted the tail, the airplane began backfiring and running rough. He reduced power, lowered the tail and aborted the takeoff. They taxied back to the starting point, did another run-up and the engines sounded fine. So, the two pilots started another takeoff and the same thing happened again. As soon as the tail was raised, the engines ran very rough. Ted aborted the second takeoff and taxied back to the ramp and cancelled the flight. Ted remembered reading about the DC-3 that crashed in St. Louis in 1984. He suspected that his plane had been fueled with Jet fuel instead of gasoline. Ted and his co-pilot then loaded the cargo into a Navajo and proceeded safely to Atlanta.

Ted remembered reading an NTSB report on a DC 3 just like the one he was flying. It was a Canadian DC-3 cargo plane that crashed during its third attempt to take off from St. Louis, Missouri en route to Toronto, Canada, on January 9, 1984. After the second aborted takeoff, the pilots radioed the FBO to ask what type of fuel was put in the tanks. They were told that it was gasoline. On the third takeoff try, both engines lost power just as the landing gear was retracted. After the left wing hit a utility pole, the aircraft went through a fence and hit a highway embankment. The captain was killed; the first officer received serious injuries. The airplane
had been serviced with Jet A. Perhaps his memory of reading this report was why Ted didn’t attempt a third take-off.

The mechanic checked out the DC-3 and found the Jet A in the tanks. When the owner of Cabell found out that the tanks were filled with Jet A after he had specifically warned Demitri, he called the Lexington police and turned it over to them to investigate and determine whether attempted murder charges should be filled against the linemen—Demitri and Kevin.

A full investigation revealed that the DC-3 engines were receiving gasoline as long as the airplane had a pitch up position while the tail wheel was on the ground, but, as soon as Ted lifted the tail, the jet fuel was fed into the engines and the engines began running rough. Fortunately, Ted was wise enough to abort both takeoff attempts; otherwise, the plane would have crashed.

If Ted had lifted off, his pitch up attitude would have increased with the result that gasoline would have again reached the engines and carried the airplane to altitude, but, as soon as Ted leveled off for cruise flight, the jet fuel would have again been fed to the engines and they both would have stopped.
A DC-3 Except for the paint, similar to the one Ted flew.

Demitri was arrested and charged with attempted murder. Dr. Alfonso, through his considerable influence, was able to bail Demitri out while he awaited trial.

Dr. Alfonso, becoming concerned that his support for Demitri might, if found out, damage his own reputation, threatened to stop legal support for Demitri at which point Demitri threatened to implicate Dr. Alfonso in the crime. He then told Dr. Alfonso that he had taped their phone conversations and played a portion of one of the incriminating conversations to the professor over the phone. The professor was shaken because his student now had the upper hand and was in control. Demitri, remembering that Thomas did not value human life as was demonstrated in his attempt to murder Ted Flynn, then informed Thomas that he had given a sealed copy of the tape recording to a friend with instructions to
send it to the police if anything should ever happen to him. The legal support continued for Demitri.

CHAPTER 46 - The Unimaginable Actually Happens!

After Ted moved back to Kentucky, his romance with the Carbondale girl ended. She found someone else. Three weeks later Dr. Alfonso came down with an infection of Escherichia coli (E. coli) bacteria, the same kind that Ted talked about with the outboard motor which made the case for intelligent design. His fever reached 105 degrees and he was in the intensive care unit for two weeks. The disease destroyed both of his kidneys causing him to be put on dialysis before he left the hospital.

The doctor came into Dr. Alfonso's room and said, “Dr. Alfonso, I'm sorry to inform you that your kidneys are destroyed and that you will have to be on dialysis for the remainder of your life unless you are fortunate enough to find a kidney donor.”

Dr. Alfonso, with a very worried look, asked the doctor, “What is involved in dialysis?”

The doctor, speaking in a matter of fact kind of way, “It means that you will have to go to a dialysis center three times a week and have your blood cleansed. “

“How long will each visit take?”

293
“Four hours.”

“I travel and give lectures all over the country. How can I do that with this condition?”

“If you want to travel, you will have to find dialysis centers where you are going and set up appointments ahead of time.”

After he left the hospital, Dr. Alfonso had his first dialysis appointment. The nurse who attended was not very skilled in finding a vein. She stabbed his arm three times before she found a good vein. A call was sent out for a kidney donor and he was put on the transplant list.

Dr. Alfonso was released from the hospital on the first Saturday of October and that following Sunday Fred Clark preached a sermon on loving one’s enemies. He quoted Jesus’ words from the Sermon on the Mount:

Matthew 5:43-47 “You have heard that it was said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Are not even the tax collectors doing that? And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even pagans do that?

Fred continued, “Is it the easy and natural thing for you to do-- to love your enemy? Would it not be more natural to hate your enemies? Would you not prefer, if possible, to seek revenge, to get even with your enemies? Some of Jesus’ commands are easy to obey and some are
difficult for us. For example, God commands husbands to love their wives. I am married to Patricia. It is a very easy command to follow for me to love her. I could not imagine myself not loving her. There are other commands which test our faith. Abraham was commanded by God to take his son Isaac three days journey and sacrifice him on a mountain. That was a very difficult command because Abraham loved Isaac very much. Here Jesus commands us to love our enemies. For most of us, if not all of us, this is a very difficult command to obey. It tests our faith.”

Ted meditated long and hard on this sermon. His enemies were obvious—Dr. Thomas Alfonso and Demitri Hoppi. Should he pray for them? Yes, absolutely and he did. He discovered as he prayed for them that his attitude toward them changed. He remembered the call for people to be tested as possible kidney donors for Dr. Alfonso. Ted thought about being tested himself as a possible donor. He did some research and found that the national waiting list for kidneys had more than 70,000 candidates. He found that the median waiting time in the United States is about three years. That year, 3,500 people died while waiting.

Dr. Alfonso had one daughter, Helen, who was one year younger than Ted. She was also enrolled as a student in the University of Kentucky. She was very attractive, five feet five inches tall, weighed about 105 pounds, and had lovely long blond hair. Her parents had been divorced for
most of her life and she lived with her mother. She too was tested and found not to be a match for her father.

Helen’s mother and father had divorced years earlier because he was carrying on a sexual relationship with one of his female students. Helen’s mom went to church regularly and brought her daughter up in the faith. Helen almost lost her faith after entering the University partly because of the lifeless rituals and traditions in her own church. Then she heard about the Josiah Church. She visited on a Sunday when Fred was preaching and was invited to lunch with Fred and Patricia after church. Patricia and another Christian studied the Bible with Helen. After studying the Bible, Patricia discovered that she had been misled about the new birth. She was taught to say the Sinners’ Prayer and accept Jesus as her personal Savior. She did this, but somehow she sensed something was lacking. Several times she re-said the Sinners’ Prayer and again and again “accepted Jesus as her personal Savior.” After studying out with her new friends what the Bible really said about the new birth, Helen learned that she had never been born again even though she had “accepted Jesus as her personal Savior,” over and over, but, she had never obeyed the gospel, II Thessalonians 1:8-9. She had never confessed Jesus as Lord as commanded in Romans 10: 9-10; she had never made the commitment to be a whole hearted disciple of Jesus Luke 14:25-33; she had never died to her sins as Jesus died on the cross (repentance); she had never been buried in the waters of baptism as Jesus was buried in the tomb and she had
never risen from the water of baptism as Jesus had risen from the grave on the third day! Helen Alfonso was baptized on a Sunday while Ted was away on a charter flight. He had never met Helen. Ted didn’t even know that Dr. Alfonso had a daughter.

The conversion of his daughter even to his wife’s church was one of the causes of Dr. Alfonso’s intense hatred for anything and everything Christian. Now that she was a member of Ted’s church, he was even more upset.

Ted made an appointment to talk with Fred Clark about his “Love Your Enemies” sermon.

“Fred, last Sunday you preached from Matthew 5:43-47 that we should love our enemies. I certainly have enemies as you know. Dr. Alfonso has tried twice to have me falsely convicted of rape and conspiracy to rape and murder. I have no doubt that he and Demetri were behind efforts to sabotage my DC-3 plane. So, without any doubt, they are my enemies. Now you have pointed out the Scripture in last Sunday’s sermon where Jesus tells me that I should love these guys, right?”

“Right.”

“You preach that I should be a doer of the word and not a hearer only, right?”

Fred, at this point a bit puzzled, answered, “Right. Why?”

“Did you know that Dr. Alfonso has lost the use of both his kidneys?”
“No, but what has that got to do with you?”

“Dr. Alfonso is on the transplant list for a kidney. Should I be tested as a possible donor for him? His kidneys have stopped functioning and I have two. I'm told that I can live with one kidney.”

Fred, realizing the implications of his sermon, became very serious and said to Ted, “I'm not sure that Jesus would ask you to carry his command to that extreme? Would that cause you to lose your pilot license? I know a person who gave a kidney and she explained to me that they practically cut your body in half to take out the kidney. She had a very slow recovery. Then there is always a chance that the recipient’s body may reject your kidney?”

Fred was talking and thinking fast. He did not want to see his friend do this. With a sudden realization of unintended consequences of his sermon, Fred said, “I almost wish I had not preached that sermon, but I have to admire your commitment to God’s word. Before you decide what to do why don’t both of us go to God with prayer and fasting for three days to get an answer?”

At the end of their fast, the two men met in Fred’s office to discuss the matter.

Ted opened the conversation saying, “Thank you for praying and fasting with me. Did God give you a different answer?”

“As much as I wished for a different answer, no, I’m sorry to say He, did not.”
Ted, with confidence, said, “Then I think that is exactly what God wants me to do. One more thing, Fred, I want this to be completely anonymous. I don’t want Dr. Alfonso knowing that I gave him a kidney?”

The two men prayed and talked for about an hour and Ted left to be tested. When the test results came back he was a match, he requested that the hospital keep his donation anonymous.

Ted then talked with his parents about the idea. Ted’s mom said, “Ted, we have diabetes in the family. Your Uncle Ramos, your Dad’s brother has the disease. If you get diabetes, you will need both of your kidneys.”

“I know Mom, it is a serious step and it is not something I delight in doing.”

Andrew, Ted’s dad said, “Ted, you are a commercial pilot. Can you retain your medical if you do this?”

“Dad, I don’t know, but I plan to find out about that.”

“If pilots are required to have two kidneys, will that cause you to change your mind?”

“No, I plan to go ahead anyway, but I sincerely hope that I can retain my medical for the pilot license.”

Ted’s parents were firmly opposed and did all in their power to dissuade their son from doing this.
Meanwhile, Ted’s closest friends argued with him that he should not give a kidney to Dr. Alfonso. First of all, they argued, Dr. Alfonso has a risky lifestyle being a promiscuous heterosexual and may soon destroy his body in other ways. Second, he is your enemy and tries to destroy the faith of numerous students in his biology classes. He tried to murder you! Third, it may destroy your career as a professional pilot. Fourth, you will be out expenses. Who will support you while you are recovering from the operation? It is not an easy operation.

Ted was steadfast in his conviction that he needed to love his enemy.

Dr. Alfonso was notified that he was scheduled in two weeks to receive a kidney from a living anonymous donor. He was informed that the chances of success were much greater when receiving a kidney from a living donor as opposed to receiving a kidney from someone who had died. He was delighted. Ted checked into the hospital and was placed in one operating room while Dr. Alfonso was in another with no idea who the donor was. The hospital had agreed to keep Ted’s identity secret.

After the operations and both men were in recovery, their friends and family came in to encourage them. Dr. Alfonso told his friends that he suspected that someone from the ACLU might be his anonymous donor, but he could not figure why that person would keep it a secret.

It took Ted several weeks to fully recover. He dropped his classes for the second semester to give himself time to heal. He then went to a
designated medical examiner and was able to renew his second class medical so that he could resume his flying career.

Meanwhile, Dr. Alfonso made a full recovery. He continued his career as a biology professor at the university; and he continued his attacks on all forms of Christianity. He learned that the Josiah Church had a ministry on campus and was about to buy land near the University to build a student center. Through his friends in ACLU, Dr. Alfonso was able to kill the deal. The land was purchased by someone who used it to build an adult XXX video store.

Dr. Alfonso’s hatred for Ted increased over time. He conferred with Demitri about how to harass the young pilot. Demitri hired a young thug to stick a knife in the tires of Ted’s car. The next morning Ted hurried out at 5 a.m to take a charter flight to Louisville, Kentucky. All four of his tires were flat. He took a taxi and made his flight as scheduled. Ted and some friends from the Josiah Church started a Bible study on campus which met once a week. They invited one of the Ph.D’s from the Community Church to speak on intelligent design the following Tuesday at noon. Dr. Alfonso used his influence to stop the use of the University room. Ted knew that he was behind all this and it troubled him.

The Josiah Church met on Sundays and on Wednesday evenings at 7:30 p.m. The following Wednesday Helen Alfonso met Carl Ray, one of Ted’s best friends. Carl, observing her beauty and friendliness said, “Helen, would you like to go to a restaurant for drinks after services?”
Helen, with a broad smile said, “Why not?”

Helen nearly often wore some kind of chocker around her neck and dressed neatly with colors that brought out her best features. They arrived at the restaurant, found a table and began to talk. Helen started the conversation with a question, “Carl, have you heard the story about my Dad’s kidney failure and how he received a kidney from an anonymous donor?”

“Yes, I heard about it.”

“Do you know who the donor is?”

Carl wished that she had not asked that question because he did know and he knew that Ted wanted to keep it anonymous.

“Yes, I know but I’m not allowed to tell. The donor wishes to remain anonymous.”

Helen felt that she had to know who the donor was and now she knew that Carl had the information she wanted. She was already attracted to Carl so she did all she could to encourage their relationship. Carl’s previous girl friend had dropped him for another guy and he was lonely. As they began dating, Helen would limit herself to one question a date about the donor. On the second date she asked, “Does the donor live in Kentucky?” Carl, thinking it would not hurt to tell that information answered in the affirmative. The next date she asked if the donor was a student in the university. “Not this semester,” Carl answered, “he plans to re-enroll again next semester.” Helen had enough information to begin her
detective work. Through school records she was able to get the names of students who had been enrolled last semester but not this semester. There were sixteen. She could further narrow the field by the fact that this donor must be a close friend to Carl otherwise Carl would not have known who he was and so much about his life. By this time she had met many of Carl’s friends and she interviewed them individually to learn more. The name of Ted Flynn, the pilot, kept coming up.

On the next date she said to Carl, “I know that Ted Flynn was the anonymous kidney donor for my father.” Carl was surprised and answered, “How did you find out? I didn’t tell you.” Helen, knowing that Carl had just confirmed her suspicions, answered, “No, you didn’t, I’ve been doing my own investigation to find out the identity of this good person.”

Helen knew that her father was persecuting Christians and especially Ted Flynn with all his might. She had dinner with her father the following Sunday evening. After they finished eating, she brought up the topic of the anonymous donor.

Helen said, “Dad, do you have any idea who gave you the kidney?”

“I suspect that someone from the ACLU might be the donor but I am not certain.”

Helen, moving closer to her Dad said, “Dad, I know who gave you the kidney. Would you like to know who it was?”
“Yes, of course I’d like to know so I could express my gratitude to that person. He or she gave me back my life. I’m teaching again and I don’t have to go through the horrors of dialysis. Tell me, who was it?

Helen, with excitement, said, “You won’t believe it, Dad. Ted Flynn, the pilot, gave you one of his kidneys”

Dr. Alfonso, with total surprise said, “I don’t believe you! I am his enemy. He must hate me. You have to be wrong, Helen. What makes you think it was him?”

“I'm dating his best friend, Carl Ray.”

She then gave her father the full story, how she did the detective work from the scraps of information Carl dropped and then, when she guessed that it was Ted Flynn, he confirmed it. He never intended to give Helen that information because Ted really did want to remain anonymous.

Thomas excused himself from the table and spent the next several hours alone mediating on what he had just learned. He had never felt love from a stranger and very little love from anyone outside his daughter. Now he had been loved in the highest degree by his bitterest enemy. He was not able to process it. He called in sick and missed classes for a week.

How could this be possible, Thomas thought? If I had been Ted Flynn, I would have murdered me. He had reasons to hate me. I lied and tried to get him expelled from the University. I tried to murder him. I prevented his speaker from appearing at the University for their Bible Club. I had his tires slashed. I tried to ruin his reputation. He should hate
me. I am his enemy. I am his enemy. Thomas kept repeating this over and over.

Dr. Alfonso could not sleep. This was not a problem his knowledge of science could solve. He pondered day and night about what motivated this young man to do this. He talked with some of his colleagues without telling them all the details about his evilness to Ted, but they were of no help. He knew Ted was religious and this started him thinking that he needed to read the Bible for the first time in his life. He began in Matthew, the first book of the New Testament. By the time he reached the fifth chapter, he read the words of Jesus:

Matthew 5:43-45  "You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous.

When he read the words above, he burst into tears. He could wait no longer. He asked Demitri for Ted's address, not telling him why he wanted it. Demitri suspected that Dr. Alfonso was planning more mischief for Ted. Thomas drove to Ted's apartment and knocked on the door. When Ted came to the door Thomas fell on his knees at Ted's feet crying. Ted, like Peter, said "Dr. Alfonso, please stand up, I am only a man." Thomas Alfonso stood up and confessed all the evil he had done to Ted and begged Ted's forgiveness. Ted guessed that someone had told him about the kidney donation. Ted invited him in. Ted was hosting a neighborhood Bible study in his apartment and had six college friends there ready to
study the Bible. They heard it all. In the weeks following, five of these friends were so impacted by what they witnessed that they were born again.

Ted, with awe and amazement said, “Dr. Alsonso why did you have this change of heart?”

“I discovered that it was you who gave me one of your kidneys.”

“How did you find out?”

Dr. Alfonso explained the whole story on how he found out through his daughter Helen. Ted did not know up to that point that he even had a daughter. He had met Helen at the church meetings but knew her only by her first name.

Thomas asked permission to further explain himself. He told how he reacted when Helen first gave him the news that Ted was the donor. He then explained how he went into seclusion for a few days, unable to process what he had just learned. He then told how he purchased a New Testament and, for the first time in his life, actually read the Bible. He explained reading the fifth chapter of Matthew where Jesus ordered his followers to love their enemies. He knew, he said, that he was Ted’s worst enemy and he was deeply moved when he realized that Ted had truly loved his bitterest enemy in one of the most powerful ways for one human to love another—Ted risked his life and his career to give part of himself to help that enemy and he did it anonymously, not expecting anything in return except the approval of his Lord, Jesus Christ!
Thomas further explained that he had purchased and read a copy of Dr. Behe’s book, *Darwin’s Black Box*. “I have been a fool, he said. I know now that Darwinism in all its forms is completely false. I have called evolution science, but that is not true.” The University may fire me, but I can no longer teach that false theory as science.”

“Furthermore, Mr. Flynn, I want to be your student. Will you and your friends please teach me what I can do to become a Christian?”

This breakthrough of prejudice reminded Ted of Mrs. Achtel, the medical doctor’s wife who changed her mind about using oxygen at high altitudes only after her loving husband performed an amazing demonstration. Maybe this is what it takes, Ted thought, to break through extremely prejudiced minds—a dramatic demonstration of real love. Perhaps genuine Christ-like love is more powerful than intellectual arguments. Peter said the same:

I Peter 3:1 *Wives, in the same way be submissive to your husbands so that, if any of them do not believe the word, they may be won over without words by the behavior of their wives,*

Ted was deeply moved with compassion. Sensing that Dr. Alfonso was open to it, Ted hugged him. Ted said, “Dr. Alfonso, I forgive you. I would love to have you as my friend and we will be honored to study the Bible with you. Now, I am even more convinced that I did the right thing in giving you one of my kidneys.”

Dr. Alfonso, relieved, said, “Please, just call me Thomas.”
Ted then explained how he was moved by the preaching of Fred Clark from the very Scripture in Matthew which Dr. Alfonso found and read. He knew that he needed to obey all of Jesus' commandments, especially the tough ones.

Ted and his friends studied with Thomas every evening for the next four days and at the following worship service, Thomas Alfonso was there. His ex-wife and daughter were also there. It was an emotional time. Everyone in the church knew about the history with Dr. Alfonso and his hatred of Christianity. The University was out for Christmas break when Dr. Alfonso was baptized as a disciple of Christ in the Josiah Church. Dr. Alfonso requested that Ted Flynn do the baptizing. Everyone in the Josiah group agreed that this was the most dramatic conversion that they had ever heard about. It could be compared with the conversion of Saul of Tarsus in the book of Acts in the New Testament. Saul was the greatest enemy of Christianity prior to his conversion. Saul had guarded the clothes of those who stoned Stephen to death. In Saul's own words:

Acts 26:11 Many a time I went from one synagogue to another to have them punished, and I tried to force them to blaspheme. In my obsession against them, I even went to foreign cities to persecute them.

Once Saul, whose name was changed to Paul, was converted, he became the most powerful and influential of all the Apostles. According to the Bible record, he planted more churches and wrote more books of the New Testament than any other Apostle.
Dr. Alfonso and his wife began a dating relationship which resulted in their re-marriage three months later. Helen was ecstatic. She loved both her parents and now, by the power of God working through his servants, Fred and Ted, her parents were again in love and living together as husband and wife. Thomas repented of his sexual sins, asked his wife to forgive him and began a new life.

News of Dr. Alfonso’s kidney donor and his conversion to Christianity spread rapidly throughout Lexington and the University of Kentucky communities. When classes started up in January, Dr. Alfonso showed up early for his first biology class. He welcomed the class back and made the following speech:

“Class, I must apologize to you. I have been guilty of teaching lies and propaganda concerning how plant and animal life came to be. If you remember my lecture on the first day of class, I stated that all life evolved from a one cell organism and that the creation story in the Bible was a myth on the order of the flat earth society in England, or the storks bring babies or Santa Claus. I claimed that evolution was a proven fact. I was arrogant, boastful and ignorant of true science. I ask that you forgive me for this atrocious error on my part.”

“Thanks to one of my students, Ted Flynn, for the first time in my life, I have examined the true science on the other side of the issue and have discovered that I have been deceived by my teachers. I have come to believe in God and now am persuaded that the creation story in the Bible
is absolutely true in every detail. I was a fool for telling you that the creation story of the Bible was a myth."

Dr. Alfonso’s students were shocked, amazed and 100% attentive as he continued. Sara Preston, writer on the student newspaper, was there with her tape recorder running. Dr. Alfonso knew this and was pleased.

Dr. Alfonso continued, “Once I started my scientific research with an open mind, I found a huge quantity of very high quality scientific data which supports creation and contradicts the theory of evolution. The evolution theory attempts to explain that all life evolved by slow, slight modifications over millions of years. Besides the Bible, the first book I read was Dr. Michael Behe’s book, *Darwin’s Black Box*. In it he described the bacteria flagellum. One example of this is the e-coli bacteria, which has on its back something like an outboard motor with propeller to propel itself through its watery environment. Of course, it is in nano size. This motor can be controlled by the bacteria with switches for on and off, forward and reverse. To imagine that this could come about by blind, unguided chance is equivalent to imaging that junk in a junk yard could assemble itself into a laptop computer ready to plug in and use.”

I have started researching a branch of science which I had previously deliberately ignored because of my prejudice. The DNA in a cell is densely packed with huge quantities of very specific information. We know that detailed and specific information can only come from intelligence. If I go into an ancient cave and see a painting of an animal
which may be very old, I know that that painting didn’t just happen by chance. It came from a mind with intelligence. When you were conceived by your parents, at that point you were about the size of a period at the end of a sentence. Yet, that small round dot contained all the information needed to grow, build and operate your entire body with all its systems and parts. All the information was there to build your entire skeleton with 206 separate bones in the adult body. The information was there in that tiny dot to build and operate your entire nervous system, your digestive system, your entire circulatory system with heart, arteries and veins; all the data was there to build and operate your eyes ears, and brain to interpret these signals, your liver, lungs, skin, etc. etc. I recommend two books on this subject—In the Beginning was Information by a German scientists, Dr. Werner Gitt and Signature in the Cell by Dr. Stephen Meter.

Dr. Alfonso’s students could not believe what they were hearing. Many had startled looks on their faces and were looking at each other trying to figure out what they were hearing.

Dr. Alfonso continued, “A strange thing has happened to me. The very evidence that I refused to look at, the e-coli bacteria with its motor, invaded my body and destroyed my kidneys. The student who first brought this evidence to my attention, Ted Flynn, anonymously gave me one of his kidneys.”

Dr. Alfonso went on to explain the full story to his class of how his worst enemy loved him and melted his hard heart through love. Then he
told how he read the New Testament and became a born again disciple. By the time he was finished it was the time for the class to end. Astonishingly, all but two of his students stood up and gave him a standing applause.

The story of what happened in that class spread rapidly throughout the university community. It was learned that Dr. Alfonso made the same speech in all his classes. As one might guess, his “friends” at the ACLU were mightily displeased and brought pressure on the University of Kentucky to fire him. They should not have bothered because he had already offered his resignation to the President of the University.

The next issue of the student newspaper carried a verbatim transcript of Dr. Alfonso’s entire speech to the class in which Sara Preston was a student. (This time she had his permission to publish the speech.) Local bookstores sold out of Dr. Behe’s book, *Darwin’s Black Box*. Dr. Meyer's book was a little harder to find, but, *Signature in the Cell* also sold out. The Thursday Community Church meetings of the group studying the science behind creation as opposed to evolution became so crowded that they had to find a larger meeting place. The other professors at the University of Kentucky became surprisingly silent on the subject of evolution. They tended to teach the science without any mention of evolution. It was known that some of these professors were attending the Community Church meetings and that many of them had purchased Dr. Behe’s book.
The Sunday following his resignation, Thomas gave his testimony at both services of Josiah Church. There were overflowing crowds due to the publicity following his conversion and resignation from the University.

CHAPTER 47 SAUL NOW PREACHED THE FAITH HE ONCE SOUGHT TO DESTROY

With Dr. Alfonso’s permission, the church decided to sponsor Dr. Alfonso in delivering a lecture to the world on why he rejected evolution in favor of creation. They advertised the upcoming lecture on local TV and in the local papers. They rented an auditorium that seated 3,000 in Lexington. This prompted discussion in all the TV and radio talk shows and tremendous interest throughout the University and the city of Lexington.

The Devil never sleeps. Out came Dr. Alfonso’s former “friends” to attack his character. They now found themselves in the awkward position of defending Ted Flynn and revealing never before heard information on how Dr. Alfonso had, unjustly, tried to get Ted expelled from the university and how Dr. Alfonso had participated in the conspiracy to bribe Owen Haskell to lie on the witness stand about Ted Flynn.

These attempts backfired on the people trying to discredit the lecture. The more they attacked, the more public interest was stirred to hear Thomas’ lecture.
All the major TV networks asked and received permission to broadcast the lecture, provided that they broadcast the lecture in its entirety. CNN and MSNBC balked at this requirement, but the other networks, including Fox Cable News agreed, but stated that they would follow the broadcast with representatives with opposite views. No tickets were sold. The lecture was free. The lecture was scheduled to start at 8:00 on Saturday evening. People were lining up by 4:30 in order to get a seat. As expected there was an overflowing crowd. Those unable to get in, hurried home to watch it on TV.

Dr. Alfonso was introduced to the audience by Fred Clark. Fred compared Thomas Alfonso with Saul of Tarsus who was converted and became Paul the Apostle of Jesus Christ. He quoted the following verse about Saul:

Galatians 1:23 *They only heard the report: “The man who formerly persecuted us is now preaching the faith he once tried to destroy.”*

Fred continued, “Saul, prior to his conversion, was a leader in persecuting Christians. He imprisoned men and women and tried to force them to blaspheme. He even consented to the stoning death of Stephen, the evangelist. Once converted, Saul’s name was changed to Paul and, according to the New Testament; he worked harder and did more to further the gospel than any of the other apostles. So too, with Thomas Alfonso, prior to his conversion, he tried with all his might to destroy Christianity. Now, that he has been converted, he, like Paul, mightily
preaches Christianity and creation, and opposes his former religion, evolution and atheism.

Dr. Alfonso has his Ph.D. in biology from Tulane University and has taught biology in the University of Kentucky for the past 30 years so he is more than qualified to speak on his chosen subject tonight. Now, let us listen attentively as Dr. Thomas Alfonso explains the scientific reasons why he left Atheism and evolution for creation and became a Bible believing Christian. For those of you who have questions, there are boxes in the rear of the auditorium. Write out your name and your question put them in the boxes and Dr. Alfonso will answer them following the lecture.”

CHAPTER 48 Dr. Alfonso’s Defense of Christianity

There was a standing applause from the Christians in the audience which made up about one third of the attendance. Dr. Alfonso came to the podium and began. “My fellow citizens and all who love truth, greetings. For years I have been calling myself an atheist, a scientist and a Neo-Darwinist. I have messed up the minds of so many young people in college that I can never undo all the harm I have caused. In spite of my wickedness, God has forgiven me and sees me as if I had never sinned. The grace of God is incomprehensible!

“Now, I am a believer in the creation as described in the first two chapters of the Bible and I am a believer in the death, burial and
resurrection of Jesus, and, praise God, I am now a born again Christian. Now I see that in all those years I helped spread Satan’s lies and called myself a scientist, I was in fact a purveyor of propaganda and one sided presentations that distorted truth about how life came to be. I didn’t educate and teach my students to think, instead, I indoctrinated them. I had closed my mind to real truth even in science. I am ashamed of my behavior then and I pray and hope that all those I deceived will overcome the effects of my distortions and learn the truth for themselves.

Lest some of you think that there is no scientific reason to reject the theory of evolution I hold here in my hands the signatures of over eight hundred scientists, all with Ph.D’s or MD degrees in the field of science, with degrees from some of the world’s most prestigious universities who state right out flatly that, and I quote,

“We are skeptical of claims for the ability of random mutation and natural selection to account for the complexity of life. Careful examination of the evidence for Darwinian theory should be encouraged.”

You can see this list for yourselves by going to:

http://www.dissentfromdarwin.org/

Dr. Alfonso continued, “Take away random mutation and natural selection and evolution fails. Take these away and the theory of evolution is left with zero support. Here are a few of those over seven hundred doctors:

“Paul Ashby Ph.D. Chemistry Harvard University
Now, I want to add my name to this list, Dr. Thomas Alfonso.

These people would not have put their signature to this very public document if they had not been certain of their convictions. By the way, this list is available on the web. They have seen the results of closed minds, totalitarian attitudes and indoctrination and value the truth more than their reputation with the high priests of evolution! Sadly, formerly, I was one of those high priests.

“As impressive as this is, the strongest argument I have seen for the truth of the Bible and Jesus Christ is love. I was so radical in my adherence to evolution that I hated everyone who failed to agree with me on that subject. I asked my class one day how many still believed in the Easter Bunny. No hands went up. Then I asked how many believed that Adam had no mother and Ted Flynn and one other student put up their hands. From that moment I persecuted Ted Flynn in the most evil and wicked ways. I tried to get him expelled from the University; I tried to get
him convicted of conspiracy to rape even though I knew he was innocent; I even tried to have him killed!

“Meanwhile I came down with a serious e-coli infection that destroyed my kidneys. I needed a kidney transplant. Ted knew that I was his worst enemy when he read the following words of Jesus from the New Testament, Matthew 5:43-44:

“You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you."

“He then went to the hospital and anonymously contributed the kidney that is keeping me alive today! He did it with no expectations of any reward in this life. I only found out when my daughter did some powerful detective work and told me that Ted Flynn, the pilot, was the donor of the kidney that saved my life.

“My world turned upside down and I began to question everything that I had moments before been completely certain about. I bought and read the New Testament for the first time in my life. I bought and read a book recommended to me by Ted Flynn himself, *Darwin’s Black Box* by Dr. Behe. In that book I realized what I fool I had been. Dr. Behe, a molecular scientist with a Ph.D., like me, described the very bacteria which had destroyed my kidneys, the e-coli. He described the enormous complexity of this tiny animal which has something equivalent to an outboard motor. It has an engine and a propeller and can start and stop it and can run it forward and in reverse. It can turn this tiny propeller at
hundreds of RPM. If that is not enough to convince anyone that this complex machine had to have a designer, God, it can divide and make another just like the original in 20 minutes! If any part of this very complex animal is missing it won’t assemble and won’t work. All the parts have to be there and working properly or nothing happens. To try and explain how this machine could have evolved slowly and gradually with slight modifications over long periods of time is, in my opinion, absurd. Dr. Behe calls it irreducible complexity.

Ted Flynn has since shared with me his take on the Comair Jet crash here in Lexington some time ago. He pointed out that these two professional pilots made an assumption that they were on the correct runway. As we all now know, there are two runways that they could have taken at Bluegrass, one too short for their plane and one which was more than adequate. It was before daylight and the captain taxied the airplane out and onto what the first officer assumed was the correct runway. He then turned the controls over to the first officer to do the takeoff. The Captain assumed that he was on the correct runway. The first officer assumed that the captain would know which runway to get on. As Ted Flynn pointed out, there were three compasses all reading the incorrect runway, but neither of the two pilots bothered to check their assumptions and as a result of assumptions that were false, forty nine people died 36 seconds later.
I began thinking of all the **assumptions** I and other scientists like me had made with regard to the theory of evolution and the origins of life. We have been just like these two pilots. We have made numerous assumptions. Take, for example, the numerous assumptions we have made regarding the age of the earth. We have stated that science proves the earth is 4.3 billion years old. That is based not on just one assumption, but on numerous assumptions. Here they are and I doubt that any scientist can refute them.

The most common method of dating fossils is to date them by the age of the rocks in which they are found and the most commonly used method of dating rocks is to date them by the fossils found in them. Hello! Circular reasoning! This would be as scientific as two robbers who robbed a house and then gave each other alibis. Don’t you hear them now, “Mr. Policeman, Sir, Joe could not have robbed that house because he was with me in another part of town.” Then Joe speaks up and says to the policeman, “Sir, Homer could not have robbed that house because he was with me in another part of town.” The “scientists” speaks up and says this fossil is 200 million years old because it is in rock of that age. “Mr. Scientists, Sir, how do you know that this rock is 200 million years old?” “Because the fossil found in it is 200 million years old.”
“But, someone objects, what about radiometric dating? That is scientific, isn’t it? Three of the common methods of radiometric dating are:

(Parent) \[\rightarrow\] (Daughter)

- potassium to argon,
- uranium to lead
- strontium to rubidium.

The half life of each of these materials is in billions of years. Potassium, the parent element, decays into daughter element argon. Uranium decays into daughter element lead and Strontium decays into daughter element rubidium.

None of these methods can be used on fossils or on sedimentary rocks in which they are found. They are used on igneous rock like lava flows. Here are the assumptions which must be made when using these methods.

#1. First, one must know the amount of parent element and daughter element there was in the beginning. No one was there to tell us so “scientists” make the assumption, for example, that there was no lead, (the daughter element from uranium), was there in the beginning, but there is no reason to believe that.

#2. “Scientists” assume that no daughter or parent isotopes have been added or removed.
#3. Then “scientists” assume that decay rates from parent to daughter have always been the same. The RATE PROJECT by creation scientists have just proved this false.

Another scientist, Professor Boudreaux stated, ‘The first (assumption) is that all of the lead particles were originally uranium particles but there is no reason to believe that there were not some lead particles in the rock when it was formed.’ The professor went on to say, ‘You see, there is plenty of natural lead in rocks that doesn’t come from uranium at all. Then there is the matter of leaking out or solubility. Salts of uranium and other radioactive elements are quite capable of dissolving in water and therefore would be removed from the sample. So if the rock had been exposed to water for some period of time such as during the flood of Noah’ day, some of the uranium could have washed out. This would mean that the age subscribed to the rock would be much too great. The other radioactive elements are no more reliable than uranium, the salts of these other elements are even more soluble than uranium salts.’

“To give a concrete example of how unreliable this method is, lave from a volcano in Hawaii which we know erupted in 1801 was dated from 160 million years old to nearly 3 billion years old!

“Someone asks about carbon 14. Carbon 14 decays into nitrogen 14. The half life of carbon 14 is 5,730 years. There should be no measurable carbon 14 beyond 95,000 years, yet we find carbon 14 in coal which dates, according to those who believe in a very old earth, from 40 to 320 million years old. Some argue contamination might be the reason. Okay, what about diamonds? Dr. Andrew Snelling from the RATE group concluded,
‘...that there is intrinsic carbon-14 in natural diamonds. Therefore, they cannot be hundreds of millions or billions of years old, as there is no other current credible explanation for the presence of this carbon-14.’ This report went on to state, ‘Diamonds are the hardest known natural substance and resist physical abrasion. Also, the chemical bonding of the carbon in diamonds makes them highly resistant to chemical corrosion and weathering. Diamonds also repel and exclude water from adhering to their surfaces, which would eliminate any possibility of the carbon in the diamonds becoming contaminated.

At 1–2 billion years old, these diamonds, which are formed deep inside the earth, are regarded as being related to the earth’s early history. Therefore, it was concluded that carbon-14 in these diamonds was consistent with a young age for the earth itself.’

William Stanfield, in Science of Evolution, 1977, stated that “It now appears that the C 14 decay rate in living organisms is about 30 percent less than its production rate in the upper atmosphere... Creationists argue that since C 14 has not yet reached its equilibrium rate, the age of the atmosphere must be less than 20,000 years.”

From an article in Acts and Facts, August 2010, earth’s magnetic field offers further proof that the earth cannot by as old as evolutionists claim. Here are excerpts from that article:

“Earth’s magnetic field provides positive proof of a very young earth. Radiation from the sun and stars continuously bombards the earth and does great damage to life. If we didn’t have the earth’s magnetic field to impede and filter this radiation, life on earth would be impossible.”

“The earth’s magnetic field has been accurately measured since 1835. The strength of the earth’s magnetic field has declined by about seven percent since then. That means the half life of our magnetic field is about 1,400 years. Going back in time, it doubles every 1,400 years. So if you go back 10,000 years, it would be so strong that, according to one expert, “…the planet would have disintegrated—it’s metallic core would have separated from its mantle.” The
inescapable conclusion is that the earth must be younger than 10,000 years old."

“Since Dr. Behe’s book, *Darwin’s Black Box*, was published, anyone who has read it must know that the game is over in trying to prove that life on earth came from non-life and all living things evolved from a single organism. If there was even a shred of doubt left for reasonable people, Dr. Stephen Meyer destroyed that notion with his excellent book *Signature in the Cell*. There is enormous highly specified and detailed information in the DNA of a cell which could not possibly have arisen from any place except intelligence.

Life forms, such as the bacterial flagellum, are much too complex for that to have happened. Instead of admitting the truth that overwhelming scientific evidence, as illustrated so well by Dr. Behe, Dr. Stephen Meyer and many others, pointed to Intelligent Design, some of my colleagues turned to panspermia, that intelligent life evolved elsewhere in the universe where conditions were more favorable and that, somehow, it was brought to planet earth. When pushed on this point by Ben Stein in his movie, *Intelligence Not Allowed*, the famous atheist/evolutionists, Richard Dawkins said that life could have come from extraterrestrial sources.
“Life originated on neither Earth nor Mars, but somewhere else entirely, such as a comet, Jupiter’s moon Europa, Venus, or body outside the Solar System altogether. It came to earth, perhaps Mars too, via some sort of Panspermia mechanism...” www.leiwenwu.tripod.com/panspermia.htm

“When Dr. Behe's book came out, if we had been honest, we would have rejected Darwinism as a sad mistake, made apologies to the public and reexamined creation, which is what the fossil say with huge megaphones! Unfortunately, I was so prejudiced that I myself did not read Dr. Behe’s book until God hit me hard with affliction, destroyed my kidneys and almost killed me with the very same little bug described in Dr. Behe’s book, the bacterial flagellum. My pride, and the pride of my fellow doctors, kept us from admitting our mistakes. Some doctors, when they realized that intelligent design was winning the argument in the minds of many and that Dr. Behe and others presented arguments they were not able to honestly answer, turned to panspermia. In essence, given evidence here on earth that completely demolished Darwinism and neo-Darwinism, instead of admitting the only other logical explanation that God created everything, they proposed the most absurd and unscientific of all explanations, panspermia, that life originated elsewhere and evolved some place where conditions were more favorable to evolution.

In other words, they have postulated an irrefutable hypothesis. How, then, can they be critical of believers in God?”
Dr. Alfonso continued, “To show how willingly and eager my former colleagues were to believe in anything except God, regardless of how unlikely or impossible, consider the following from Answers.com:

‘A meteorite originating from Mars known as ALH84001 was shown in 1996 to contain microscopic structures resembling small terrestrial microfossils. When the discovery was announced, many immediately conjectured that the fossils were the first true evidence of extraterrestrial life — making headlines around the world, and even prompting U.S. President Bill Clinton to make a formal televised announcement to mark the event. As of 2003 however, most experts agree that these are not indicative of life, but may instead be formed abiotically from organic molecules.’

"It is likely that your children’s textbooks will introduce some version of panspermia as a plausible explanation for origin of irreducibly complex life forms here on earth. We now spend our energy defending the Bible against evolution, and true science is on our side. The Devil, meanwhile, is preparing and making ready his counter attack with this outlandish extraterrestrial theory which will soon be called science.”

“Chandra Wickramasinghe, director of the Cardiff Centre for Astrobiology, admits that true science does not support the idea that life originated here on earth and is one of those who have resorted to panspermia said: ‘The general view still prevailing is that ... life must have begun on Earth. There is no logic that demands that and at the present time all the evidence is against that point of view... The odds against
microbes surviving such a space journey pales into insignificance when compared with the insuperable odds against starting life anew in a warm little pond on the Earth.” (From Space.com)

“In answering a question from Stuart Miller on why he turned to the idea that life started elsewhere and was transported to earth by comets, Dr. Wickramasinghe said,

‘When we examined the probabilities that are involved in putting together the most primitive living system, for instance, considering how amino acids combine into a basic set of enzymes (that is crucial for life), it didn't take a lot of calculation to discover that this is an incredibly improbable event. If it happened on the Earth, it means we've essentially overcome superastronomical odds in doing so.’

‘In view of the superastronomically vast improbability factors that are associated with the assembly of the first living system, we quickly rejected the Earth as a reasonable site for a first origin of life. It would obviously pay to go to the biggest available cosmic system if one had to overcome such incredible odds. And the biggest available cosmic system is the Universe as a whole.’

‘Our first step in the direction of Panspermia was to suggest that the Earth's early atmosphere was of a kind that could not have supported the requirements of classic Urey-Miller experiment, that the Earth's atmosphere was largely oxidising, and therefore you wouldn't have got any of the organic building blocks of life formed in-situ on the Earth.”

“In 1960, Thomas Gold proposed the garbage theory,
A team of explorers from an advanced, interstellar-faring race might land on the planet of a foreign star and, unwittingly, leave behind "bugs" which then adapt to the local conditions. He imagined, for example, the visitors having a picnic and not clearing up afterward."

Dr. Alfonso continued his lecture for two hours explaining in laymen’s terms how that he now sees the idea that all life evolved from a common ancestor as impossible then took his seat. Fred Clark came to the microphones invited members of the audience to ask questions. There were members of the Josiah Church scattered throughout the audience with mikes.

The first question came from Joseph who said, “We have a question from Dr. Earl Yabonsky, who is professor of philosophy at the University of Kentucky.” He then handed the mike to the professor.

“Dr. Alfonso, how can you, a scientist, say that the earth is just 6,000 years old?”

“I’m glad you asked that question. I would not argue for an exact age of 6,000 years, but I would argue that the earth is somewhere between 6,000 and 10,000 years old. First, evolutionists must have vast amounts of time for their theory to have any plausibility. If they agreed to a young earth, they would have to abandon their theory, so, whatever the scientific evidence is, they are compelled to force fit it into an old earth theory.”
Dr. Alfonso continued, “Dr. David Menton has written an article called the Dating Game. Here are some facts which he sets forth in that article:

*The most widely-used method of determining the age of fossils is to date them by the “known age” of the rock strata in which they are found.

*The most widely used method for determining the age of rock strata is to date them by the “known age” of the fossils they contain.

*This is an outrageous case of circular reasoning and geologists are well aware

Dr. Menton goes on to point out that the age of the earth was “scientifically” determined to be 100 million years old when Darwin’s book was published. Then, by 1932, it was determined to be 1.6 billion years old. By 1947 ‘geologists firmly established’ the age of the earth to be 3.4 billion years old. Then in 1978 they really found out that the earth is actually 4.6 billion years old. Thus for 100 years the age of the earth doubled every 20 years. If these trends continue, the earth will be 700 thousand-trillion-trillion-trillion years old by the year 4000 AD.’

‘If these methods of dating are so unreliable, one should find widely divergent dates for the same strata, and so we do. For example, Lava flows from volcanoes on the north rim of Grand Canyon (which erupted after its
formation) show dates a billion years older than the most ancient basement rocks.'

‘Lava from Hawaii erupted 1801 AD dated (potassium-argon) from 160 million years to nearly 3 billion!’

Dr. Alfonso continued, ‘According to J. Odgen, director of a radiocarbon laboratory, ‘It may come as a shock to some, but fewer than 50 percent of the radiocarbon dates from geological and archaeological samples in northeastern North America have been adopted as ‘acceptable’ by investigators.’ Annals of the New York Academy of Science 288: 167. 1977.

“Dr. Yabonsky, the audience may have forgotten that you asked the original question, why do I, as a scientists, believe that the earth 6,000 years old. Would you like a chance for rebuttal of the answer which I just gave?”

Dr. Yabonsky responded, “Thank you, no. I’m still skeptical of the answer you gave, but I’m not prepared to respond. I'll need time to research the data you have presented.”

Another question: “We have a question from Dr. Donald Rand, from the Department of Biology, University of Kentucky.”
Dr. Rand asked, “Sir, do polystrate fossils tell us anything about the age of the earth?”

“Thank you, Dr. Rand. The short answer is yes, polystrate fossils do lend support for a young earth and I'll explain how. First, allow me to give a definition with a photograph followed by explanation.

At this point, Dr. Alfonso turned on his projector and showed the following photographs of a polystrate fossil:
Photographs used by permission: www.ianjuby.com
“These are trees which stands vertically through many strata, hence the word, polystrate. According to old earth theory the layers at the base of these trees are millions of years older than the layers at the top. If that is so, how did these polystrate fossils get here? Did they wait until the layers were formed and then just jab themselves down through them or did the tree just stand there for 20 million years and wait for the layers to form around it? By and large, those who argue for an earth that is 4.5 billion years old just ignore polystrate fossils. Those few who have tried to deal with them say that they must have been buried at the mouth of a river. As you will see today, the mouth of a river won’t hold up against the evidence.”

“We just had a demonstration of this very thing with Mt. St. Helens which erupted May 18, 1980. The blast took 1,000 feet off the height of the mountain and leveled 100,000 acres of trees. Many of these trees were left floating in Spirit Lake.
At first they floated horizontally. After a time, they became water soaked and the tree went vertical with the big end (the heavy end) on the bottom. They sank to the bottom of the lake into the muck. That very same thing must have happened during the flood of Noah’s day.

Dr. Gordan, professor of biology at the University of Kentucky came forward with another question. “Dr. Alfonso, if you are right and God did create this earth and everything in it, why is there near universal agreement among scientists that evolution is true?”

“Thank you, Doctor, for that question. Even if you are right, I ask does universal agreement make something true? The majority in Galileo’s day disagreed that the earth is in the sun’s orbit and Galileo was convicted of heresy. But, if fact, there is not universal agreement on evolution. I have here in my hands a copy of Discover magazine decrying the fact that so many biology teachers in U.S. classrooms still taught intelligent Design instead of Darwin’s theory.”

“The article states that researchers, led by Penn State’s Eric Plutzer, in a rigorous nationwide survey of nearly 1,000 teachers, found that one is six biology teachers espoused young earth creation views and most taught these to their students while only 23 percent strongly agreed with
evolution. If the facts of evolution were as obvious as the composition of water, two parts hydrogen and one part oxygen, this controversy would end.”

After Dr. Alfonso answered all the questions, and there were many, the audience was invited to continue their study of this issue and, to help them, they were given web sites and they were invited to Community Church for the Thursday meetings. The following Thursday night, Community Church did not have room for all the people who attended.

CHAPTER 49—NEW ROMANCE

Helen and Carl broke off their relationship after the conversion of her Dad. Carl found someone else back in his home town to date. Ted had been attracted to Helen but refrained from making it known because he did not want to offend his friend, Carl. Now that Carl was engaged to the girl back home, Ted thought it fair to ask Helen out on a date. He met her after church services:

“Helen, would you like to have lunch with me today?”

“Ted, you are my hero. You endangered your health and your profession to help my Dad when you gave him one of your kidneys. You’re love melted my Dad’s heart which led to his salvation. I would consider it high honor to go to lunch with you!”

Ted, being funny, said, “Is that a yes?”
Helen laughed. She was even more beautiful when she laughed. The two of them went to a local restaurant and enjoyed a very long lunch. They had many dates over the next three months. Finally, just after a one inch snow fall, Ted went to a farmer friend’s field near Lexington and stomped out in 12 foot letters the words:

“HELEN, WILL YOU MARRY ME?”

TED.

Ted then took black dirt and filled in all the letters so that they stood out in the white background. Then he drove to Helen’s home and asked her to go flying with him. She agreed and the two of them drove to Bluegrass Airport where Ted had reserved a Cessna 152, a two place, high winged, single engine airplane. Helen had no idea why he wanted to fly on such a cold day, but she would not say no to him. After they took off and leveled off, Ted set the airplane on a westerly course and asked Helen to fly it.

“Ted, where are we going?”

“I have something I want you to see.”

Just before they arrived at the farmer's field, Ted took the controls and flew the little plane by the field with the message in clear view out of Helen’s window. She failed to look down, so Ted did a 180 degree turn and flew back by it again.

“Why did we turn around?”
“There is something I want you to see.”

She still did not look down, so Ted did another 180 turn and flew by the same field with the message the third time. This time, when they were abeam of the field, Helen looked down and saw the message. She read the message aloud,

“HELEN, WILL YOU MARRY ME?”

TED.

(They both had on headsets with intercom, so it was easy to understand every word spoken to each other). She read it a second time in unbeliev.

“Ted is that for me?”

Ted, again being funny, said, “no, that’s for Barbara Bush.” (laughing)

“If your name is Helen, then it’s for you. Would you like to answer the question or must I fly around this field all day?”

“Ted Flynn, besides my love for God, my second greatest desire is to become Mrs. Ted Flynn. Yes, of course I'll marry you and I'll make you the best wife that I am capable of being!”

At this the two engaged in a long kiss while the little airplane flew itself in a gentle left turn. When the kiss ended, Ted reset their course for Bluegrass.
When they landed, they drove to Helen’s parents’ home and Ted asked her them for permission to marry their daughter. They could not have been more pleased. That had been their prayer since they came to really know Ted Flynn.

CHAPTER 50 — THOMAS’ LIFE GOES IN A NEW DIRECTION

After Thomas Alfonso resigned from the University of Kentucky, he began an intensive study of the Bible. He had been in education long enough that he received a retirement pension. With this and his wife's income, the Alfonso’s had enough to live comfortably. He started by reading the Bible through with Fred Clark. Fred recommended that they read three chapters a day in the Old Testament and one in the New Testament and that they start with Genesis chapters 1, 2 and 3 and Matthew 1 the first day. The second day they would pick up there with Genesis 4, 5 and 6 and Matthew 2 and so on until they finished the entire Bible. At this pace, they would finish the entire Bible in around eleven months. Each man would read the assigned four chapters, then call one another on the phone and spend 30 minutes talking about the contents of those four chapters. Fred did extra research every day because he realized that Thomas had the potential to be a powerful influence for Christ. In addition to the Bible, Thomas also read three commentaries recommended by Fred. Ted Flynn heard about what they were doing and asked to join them. Fred and Thomas welcomed him in for the discussions. This they did by three-way calling on the telephone.
They talked every morning from 5:30 to 6:00 a.m. It was a stimulating discussion and Fred realized that he was reaping enormous sermon material from these discussions. They completed the entire Bible in just over eleven months.

During the time they were reading the Bible through, Thomas taught a class at church on creation vs. evolution and several times both Thomas and Ted were asked to preach at the Josiah Church when Fred and Charles were out of town. Thomas became a featured speaker at the Thursday meetings of scientists for creation. The Sunday morning after the three completed reading the Bible cover-to-cover, Fred bought both Ted and Thomas plaques honoring their accomplishment. He called them the Spiritual Sword Awards since the symbol for the Bible is a sword. They were called up on stage and given these in the presence of the whole congregation. This inspired other members to get together by threes and start their journey through the Bible.

Meanwhile, Thomas, spurred on by evolutionary atheist among his former friends, developed a DVD about the life cycle of the monarch butterfly. Remembering Darwin’s statement:

“If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down.”

Thomas claimed that this small insect proved positively that Darwin’s theory had absolutely broken down and challenged all his friends with the data provided in his DVD. Not one of them was willing to even discuss how
the monarch butterfly might have evolved, so Thomas wrote a summary of
the life cycle of this marvelous creature along with a series of questions and
emailed it to several of them. Here is his document:

The Monarch Butterflies east of the Rocky Mountains migrate to
central Mexico for the winter. Some travel up to 3,000 miles from eastern
United States and Southern Canada. Since they are cold bloodied, they must
do this or die in the cold harsh winters of the north. They come out of
hibernation in February and March in Mexico. Then their sexual organs
develop, they mate, then in early spring they move into southern Texas and
lay eggs on milkweeds which have just emerged, it must be milkweeds,
soon thereafter they die. Then their offsprings continue their northern
migration back to eastern USA and Canada. The second generation
continues the migration north and after about a month to six weeks, they
lay eggs and die. Finally, the fourth generation reaches the destination, but
they don't die in a month or six weeks. They live up to nine months because
they must fly up to 3,000 miles all the way back to Mexico sometimes to the
very tree on which their great grandparents hibernated. How does this
fourth Methuselah generation know to go to Mexico, a place where they
have never been? How do they navigate? They only fly in the daytime, so
they must navigate by the sun. Considering that the sun is constantly
moving in the sky from east to west and that the earth in is constant tilting
with reference to the sun toward then away from the sun in the northern
hemisphere thus making our seasons, the monarch butterfly would need
two internal clocks to make the calculations necessary to navigate by the sun. Millions of these tiny insects do it so it must be possible. No way can Darwinian evolution explain this by “numerous, successive, slight modifications.” All the butterflies which failed the first time to make that migration would have frozen to death.

The eggs hatch out in about four days and what emerges is not a butterfly and not anything that resembles a butterfly. It is a worm which has no wings with very poor eyesight and looks nothing like a butterfly. It eats the poisonous milkweed which does not harm the worm. It eats and eats until it increases it body weight up to 3,000 times its original size. During this time it molts three or four times giving itself a larger skin each time. Then it goes into the chrysalis stage in which its body is enclosed in a hard shell. Inside this shell, it dissolves most all its cells except the heart. In about ten days the former worm destroys most all its former worm parts including eyes, mouth and legs and develops brand new body parts it never had before including four wings with muscles, new and much, much better eyes and emerges as a beautiful butterfly with uncanny navigational skills to travel thousands of miles internationally!

Questions for which evolutionists have no satisfactory answer:

1. When these second generation butterflies come out of the chrysalis in southern Texas, how do they know to go north instead of south back to Mexico?

2. Why would the worm go into the chrysalis where it destroys all its body parts including legs, eyes and mouth—everything except the heart without knowing why?
3. How did it learn to navigate by the sun?

4. How do they navigate by the sun when it is in constant motion with reference to the earth as it travels east to west as the earth spins on its axis and as the earth tilts back and forth toward and away from the sun to make our seasons?

5. How did the female butterflies learn to recognize milkweeds?

6. How do they know when they get there?

7. Why does the fourth generation live nine months while the three preceding generations lived from one month up to six weeks?

8. What tells the fourth generation butterflies to eat and not breed and then to fly 3,000 miles to a place where they have never been?

9. The female butterfly glues the newly laid egg to the underside of a milkweed leaf. How did her body know how to make glue?

10. For the chrysalis stage, the female spins a silk pad and attached her hind legs to it. How did she learn to do this?

11. How did the veins develop in the wings and how did the butterfly learn to pump them rigid with fluid when it emerges from the chrysalis?

   Some of Thomas’ atheist/evolutionists friends were moved by his teachings and the DVD and began studying the Bible with him. Not surprisingly, others ridiculed him and went on a slanderous mission to totally discredit him.

   The Josiah Church members in Lexington searched out among their own members men who met the qualifications for elders (bishops) as
outlined in Titus 1 and I Timothy 3 and the two evangelists appointed them as elders. The evangelists then, having been relieved of the work of shepherding the flock, gave their attention to world-wide evangelism. Their desire was to fulfill the commission given by Jesus in Matthew 28:18-20 to make disciples of all nations. There was no church like theirs in Louisville, Kentucky so they decided to send a group of about twenty there to start one. These twenty disciples quit their jobs in Lexington and moved to Louisville to look for jobs there so they could help start the new planting. They needed someone to lead it and the name of Thomas Alfonso was on all their minds. Fred, Charles, and the elders of the church called Thomas and Elizabeth Alfonso in and asked them to lead the new church planting in Louisville. The Alfonso’s listened carefully and promised to pray and fast about it and give an answer in a few days.

CHAPTER 51—THE MARRIAGE

Ted and Helen's wedding day was fast approaching. The days seemed like nothing to Ted because of the intense love he had for Helen. Being wise stewards of money, they both decided to spend as little as possible on the wedding. Helen decided that her bridesmaids would be allowed to select their own dresses from whatever they already had in their respective closets. To Helen and Ted, the variety provided by each bridesmaid selecting her own prettiest dress would be more appealing than if each wore exactly the same dress. That, to Helen, would be like
looking at a subdivision where rows of houses were exactly alike except for the house number. Helen specifically requested that they not purchase new dresses for the occasion. She would wear the same wedding gown worn by her mother at her wedding. They would use the Josiah Church building and, since the local ministers were already employed by the church, the building and the ministers would cost them nothing.

Ted was a practical guy. He reasoned that too many young couples spent thousands on a wedding which lasted a few hours and then suffered near poverty trying to start off as a married couple. They could have used that money much more wisely in trying to find a place to live, buy furniture, buy insurance, pay bills, and, if a baby came along, to buy diapers.

The reception was pot luck. The ladies of the church were delighted to contribute by bringing their favorite dishes to the church fellowship hall for the reception.

The Alfonso’s gave the young couple a seven day Caribbean cruise for their honeymoon with the money they would have used for the wedding. Ted and Helen allowed themselves this one extravagance.

The great day arrived and Ted and Carl, his best man, were the first to arrive at the church. Ted wore an ordinary suit with an aviation neck tie. Fred and Charles both presided over the wedding and gave everyone present a full presentation of God’s teaching about marriage. One man married to one woman for life, and divorce was not an option. Thomas
walked down the aisle with his daughter Helen and gave her away. She never looked lovelier as she stood beside Ted facing the two ministers. At the close of the ceremony, Ted kissed his new wife then Fred presented them to the church as Mr. and Mrs. Ted Flynn.

CHAPTER 52 — HATE, A HEAVY BURDEN TO CARRY

Robert Bergman never got over his hatred for Ted Flynn. He still blamed him for his daughter's death and the thought of Ted being happily married was too much. He hid on the roof of a store building across the street from the church with a high powered rifle and waited for Ted and Helen to depart. In his warped mind, he planned to shoot Helen instead of Ted in order to bring more pain to Ted.

The wedding party went from the auditorium directly into the fellowship hall for the reception. It lasted for more than two hours while the limo, supplied as a gift from his defense lawyer, Preston, waited outside with Robert Bergman still hiding on the roof of the store building. Just before the newly married couple left for the hotel, there came a violent thunderstorm with heavy rain. Lighting was striking all around. Robert Bergman with his high powered rifle ran for cover. Someone in the wedding party asked why God would allow it to rain so hard during this glorious moment. What this person didn’t know was that, without this thunderstorm, Robert Bergman would have been able to carry out his evil
plans. The newly married couple made it safely to the secret hotel location that Ted had selected a few weeks before the wedding.

The following morning they drove to Bluegrass Airport and took a plane to Miami for their ocean cruise.

The cruise went from Miami to the Bahamas, then to Puerto Rico and other islands. With nothing to do except enjoy each other, the couple fell even more in love. There were no phones ringing, no sirens blasting, no time lines except to join their party of three other young couples at dinner each evening. They ate with the same people each evening. There were no tips to worry about because the cruise assessed the passengers for tips at the end of the cruise.

Ted and Helen became best friends with all three of the couples and studied the Bible with one of them—Bruce and Eva Taylor, an African American couple from Birmingham, Alabama. On the last day of the cruise, Bruce and Eva made the decision to become baptized disciples of Christ and asked Ted and Helen to baptize them in the ship’s swimming pool. Ted made every aspect of their conversion exactly what the Bible said and ignored all man made traditions.

By this time the four of them were standing in the swimming pool with their clothes on. A number of curious passengers were watching. They witnessed as Bruce and Eva both confessed Jesus as Lord. Then they heard Ted announce that he was baptizing Bruce “in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit for the forgiveness of your sins and
you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.” Immediately after, following the same words, Helen immersed Eva. The couples hugged and climbed out of the pool rejoicing. The passengers watching broke out in applause.

The Taylors were also newly weds on their honey moon. The couples exchanged phone numbers and made plans to stay in touch with each other. Ted and Helen returned to Lexington to their apartment and picked up with their lives filled with joy to be back with their friends in the Josiah Church.

Robert Bergman, even more angry because of his failed attempt to murder Helen, heard that the newly weds were back in town and was attempting to find out where they were living. He had not shared his plans with anyone, especially not his wife, Jesse. He did, on the other hand, write a five page letter to his brother, Kenneth, who lived on the outskirts of Lexington and who had just started visiting services at the Josiah Church on Sundays. The letter was literally dripping with hate for Ted Flynn. While joy, love, forgiveness, and positive feelings activate the immune system in our physical bodies and make us healthier both physically and mentally, the opposite holds true for hate, grudge holding, and bitterness which destroy one’s health both physically and emotionally. Three days after writing the five page letter to his brother, Robert fell dead in his back yard from a heart attack. Ted never knew about his evil plans. One is made to wonder how many times God protects his people without their knowledge!
CHAPTER 53 OLD PEOPLE CAN LEARN

Ted had some early discussions with his Dad about religion, but Ed Flynn, was suspicious about the whole Josiah thing and was convinced that the Bible could not be taken seriously because he was convinced of evolution and doubted that a universal flood ever took place. Ted’s Dad and Mom were visiting Lexington during their vacation so Ted took advantage of this and had the Alfonso’s over for dinner. Ed had mixed feelings toward this strange doctor. He hated that he was wearing one of his son’s kidneys yet, at the same time, he was impressed that this scientist was converted by his son. Meanwhile Sarah Alfonso, Thomas’ wife, had herself converted to the Josiah Church. She and Margaret Flynn, Ted’s Mom, hit it off from the start. During the meal, Ted brought up the subject of religion.

“Dad, why don’t you share your ideas about evolution and the age of the earth?”

“I’d be happy to do that. I think the science is clear that this earth is about 4.5 billion years old. After all there is carbon dating and no one in his right mind would deny that. Besides, all scientists are in agreement that all life on earth evolved slowly over millions of years. But, we have a scientist here with us. What do you think Dr. Alfonso?”

“Please Ed, just call me Thomas. Two years ago I would have been in 100% agreement with most of what you just said. That is what I taught here in the University of Kentucky for years and I called it science. I have
since changed my mind. Now, I doubt that the earth is over 10,000 years old and I doubt that evolution can explain the rise of different kinds of animals and plants."

“Dr. Alfonso, I mean Thomas, what changed your mind from a scientific standpoint. I know about your emotional ties to my son, Ted.”

“Ed, I was so blind to real science that I ignored or refused to consider real science which contradicts the theory of evolution and the old age for the earth. You said that all scientists agreed that life evolved slowly over millions of years.”

Thomas shared with Ed the pages listing the 800 scientists who doubted evolution.

Ed was flabbergasted. He never expected such a well thought out answer, but Ed came back with this statement. “Thomas, that is impressive and I will have to consider that, but what about the carbon 14 dating. You have to agree that it shows the earth to be millions of years old, don’t you?”

“Ed, I’m not surprised that people get confused by what appears as science in the news media, magazines, movies and our culture generally. The facts are that carbon 14 is never used to date anything that approaches the vast amount of time for evolution to be true. The half life of Carbon 14 is 5,730 years which means that in 5,730 years the Carbon 14 is half as radioactive as it was originally and that in another 5730 years it will be one fourth as radioactive, then 1/8th, 1/16th etc. In
less than 100,000 years it would be undetectable, yet, we find active Carbon 14 in diamonds that are supposed to be 300 million years old.”

“Wow Thomas! I guess I have been misinformed. Tell me more.”

Thomas went on for the next two hours defending the Bible and scientifically attacking evolution and scientifically supporting the Bible story of Noah and the great flood. Thomas and one of his friends from church then studied the Bible with Ed while Elizabeth Alfonso and one of her friends studied with Ted’s Mom. The following Sunday Ted baptized his Dad into Christ for the remission of his sins and his Dad turned around and baptized Ted’s Mom. The family was now united in Christ and there was rejoicing throughout the whole Josiah church as well as among the angels in heaven. Satan was sulking and taking out vengeance on his demons for their failures. They were trying to explain the roles the guardian angels played and why they lost, but Satan would hear none of it.

CHAPTER 54—CAREER CHOICES

Ted and Helen continued their education in the University of Kentucky at Lexington. Two years later they both graduated with honors. Ted received his degree in journalism and secondary education and Helen received a degree in elementary education. Ted continued as a part time flight instructor and charter pilot at Bluegrass while Helen worked for the
University. Three weeks after their graduation, they learned that Helen was pregnant.

After graduation Ted applied for a job as a pilot with American Airlines and with some large companies who owned their own airplanes. Three weeks later one of these companies called to offer Ted a pilot job. Earlier that same day Ted and Helen just learned that they were pregnant.

Ted asked advice from Henry Zin, another brother in the church who was a career pilot for a private company.

Ted asked, “Henry, I’ve just been offered a pilot job with a large company with a lucrative salary. To complicate matters, Helen and I just learned that she is pregnant. What do you think, should I take the job?”

“Ted, I can’t advise you on that, but allow me to share how the profession has affected my life. I’ve been flying for a company for twenty three years. When the boss calls, I have to go and stay as long as he likes. I was not even allowed to go to my daughter’s graduation. I missed many of my son’s most important sports events because my company demanded my time elsewhere. Now, my son and my daughter are like strangers to me. As much as I love flying, looking back, I wish I had chosen another profession.”

“Thank you Henry. You have certainly given me food for thought.”

Ted talked with Fred who suggested that he pray, fast, and trust God to give him the wisdom to make the best decision. At the end of the fasting and praying, Ted then came to the firm conclusion that a
profession as a full time pilot for a major company was not his best choice. He called the company and turned down their offer. This was so rare that the person representing the company could not believe what he was hearing. He asked, “Are you sure that you are Ted Flynn and that you are turning down this opportunity to fly for our company? You know that our aircraft are nearly new and that they are much better equipped than the airlines?

“Yes, I am Ted Flynn and regretfully I am turning down the job.”

They decided to let Helen stay home and have their baby. Ted retained his job as flight instructor at Bluegrass.

Ted then applied for a high school teaching position. He was called back for a second interview at Henry Clay High School in Lexington. The school had over 2,000 students and over 100 teachers. Ted’s assignment would be to teach fourth year English and journalism and, believe it or not, the school allowed Ted to teach an elective—Private Pilot. He offered to sponsor a flying club and to teach interested students to fly. He took them two at a time to Bluegrass airport after school and instructed them through solo. He also requested a minimum 3.0 grade point average as eligibility for his Private Pilot course. As one might guess, this was a popular elective. Thirty students signed up for the course the first year. Ted did everything by the book. All students who took flying lessons had to have signed permission slips from both their parents on file in the principal’s office prior to taking lessons. Ted did not charge for the flight
instruction, but the students paid for the rental on the planes. It was his contribution to the students. Students who took his aviation course loved it. Ted scheduled an FAA examiner who came to his classroom and administered the actual test for private pilot at the end of the semester.

Ted loved teaching and had time to spend with his new family. Their new baby girl, Emily, was born on July, 3. She was a perfect baby with a full head of hair.

Perhaps, because of his own experience with unfair news reports, Ted taught his students to think critically when watching or reading controversial news stories. In their own writing, he insisted that they be balanced. Did they tell both sides fairly or did they just write a propaganda piece? He taught his students to look for bias everywhere. When looking at news photographs, he taught them to ask is this picture flattering or did it catch the person at their worst moment? If you wanted to make the other side look good, where and how could you have taken a photograph to do that? Look out for loaded language. Ted taught his students to count the statements on both sides of a controversial story to measure balance.

CHAPTER 55 – FRED GOES TO AFRICA

Fred and Patricia Clark came by to see the new baby and to congratulate the parents. He shared with Ted that he had looked up his genealogy and learned that his ancestors descended from a tribe in Kenya.
God put it on his heart to go back and start a church among his own people in keeping with the Josiah principles of total restoration of the church as it was in the first century as described in the book of Acts.

Fred had been named after Frederick Douglas, the escaped slave who taught himself to read and write and became highly educated on his own. In those days it was illegal to teach slaves to read. Frederick was brilliant and perceived that there is power in education which motivated him to seek education above all else even though the cards were heavily stacked against him. Fred Clark had the same hunger and thirst to fully know God’s will for his life.

By this time every state in the Union had people joining the Josiah Church. Through military personnel and in many other ways, the Josiah Movement spread to many other countries of the world.

Fred told the church that he had it on his heart to take a team and start the movement in Kenya. The church in Lexington put out the news and it spread nationally. Soon more than twenty people had signed to go with Fred and his family. Charles Hoffmiester and the Josiah Church in Lexington gave the Clarks an elaborate going away party. People had mixed emotions—they didn’t want to lose the Clarks, yet at the same time, they all knew that it was God’s will for the Clarks to take the gospel to Kenya.

Now that Fred and Patricia were going to Kenya, Charles Hoffmiester felt short-handed with the Lexington church. He asked Ted to
resign his teaching job and join him in the ministry. Ted talked it over with his wife.

“Helen what do you think.”

“Ted, I'm with you 100% in whatever you decide to do.”

“I know but I do have a good retirement plan with the school district and I do like teaching and it allows me to continue some flying.”

“ I know that you will make a spiritual decision based on your opinion of God’s will. You did it when my Dad needed a kidney and I know you will do the right thing now.”

“If we go into the ministry, it will be for both of us because we are a team and I do foresee us moving many times. Are you okay with that? ”

“Of course I’m okay with that. I'm your wife and lifetime partner.”

Ted resigned at the end of the school year and both he and Helen were added to the full time staff at the Lexington church. It worked out well. Charles, while the senior man and much more knowledgeable about the Bible, treated Ted as an equal and the four of them worked as one. Two years later Ted and Helen were sent with a team to start a church in St. Louis, Missouri.
EPILOGUE

FRED’S FORTY DAY FAST

Jesus went to the wilderness for his 40 day fast, so Fred decided to leave his home and spend the 40 days in State Parks away from anyone he knew. He purchased a tent with a floor. Fred then took his tent to a state park and pitched it in a spot where he could have privacy. The first week of his fast a Blue Grass festival was held in the park and Fred loved Blue Grass music, but he considered his purpose was spiritual and he did not want his mind diverted from concentration on God for these 40 days. That was why he was fasting from TV, radio, and newspapers so that his mind was completely free to explore whatever God had in store for him. He spent most all his time either in mediation, prayer, Bible reading, note taking or just walking through the woods admiring God’s creation.

There was a mountain in the first park where Fred camped. He remembered that Jesus spent one entire night in prayer on a mountain prior to a very important decision—- the selection of his 12 Apostles. Fred decided to follow Jesus’ example in this too. Fred was about to make a decision concerning the proposed debate between himself and Charles Hoffmiester so he too climbed the mountain to spend the entire night in prayer asking God to give him wisdom. The mountain took 50 minutes to climb and 35 minutes to descend. Fred was surprised, in view of his fasting, at how much strength he had to climb this mountain. There was a fire tower on top of the mountain and steps going up to the room on top.
The room was unoccupied but locked. Fred was able sit on the steps at the base of the room probably 75 feet above the ground. This would hopefully keep him out of the way of snakes. There were bears in these woods and Fred had no weapon of any kind to defend himself. This concerned him to some degree until he realized that this was Satan’s prompting. God would protect him. Fred later purchased a hunting knife and cut a strong hickory stick for defense. He never had occasion to use it. The view was excellent. He could see the beautiful wooded mountains and hills for miles in all directions. Fred had tried to memorize Psalms 145 to use in his personal prayer. He had about half memorized when darkness set in. Fred prayed and sang all the songs he knew to keep himself awake for the night. Finally, after running out of songs, he became very sleepy. He fought sleep with all his might, but finally, around 2 or 3 a.m. he dropped off to sleep for possibly 10 minutes or so. He then remembered how the Apostles slept when Jesus requested that they stay awake and watch. Fred had less condemnation for the sleepy Apostles after this. After this short unwelcome nap, he then was able to stay awake until daylight, after which he came down the mountain, entered his tent and went to sleep.

Fred’s wife, Patricia, came to visit him on the fifth evening and decided to spend the night with him. She worried that she would be too much temptation for him. He assured her that this was not the case, not because she was not beautiful, but because this was not where his mind
was at this point. She visited again the twelfth night. He was tempted but over came the temptation.

Fred did not shave for the 40 days. This was the first time in his life that he had grown a beard.

Fred gave full attention to God’s creation. He noticed that there seemed to be a spiritual lesson in the tree limbs. The limbs of trees whose leaves were in sunlight were healthy and growing. All those which were lower on the tree and when the tree was younger had plenty of sunlight and had flourished, but now that other limbs came in above them and shielded them from that precious sunlight, they died and fell off the tree. Isn't this a lesson for Christians? Those who bask in the light of God's word thrive and grow spiritually. Those who allow themselves to be shut off from the true light, the Bible, drift away from God and fall into all kinds of grievous sins and, eventually, sadly, into spiritual death. The fact that they may have read the Bible earlier in their lives did not stop their death when they ceased to receive the sunlight of God’s word. Fred had never known anyone who left God while reading their Bible every day, on the other hand, he had never known anyone who stayed faithful who totally stopped Bible reading and stopped praying. He did know of some people who, though they did no serious study in the Bible, came to all the services and appeared to others to be righteous, however, their lives were often full of secret sins. He had a large oak tree in his front yard which was hit by lightening in the middle of the summer and died. Fred hired
someone to cut it down. They needed to climb the tree and take it down in pieces because of its location. When the tree cutter got about half way up the tree, he noticed that the tree was hollow inside and he was afraid to climb higher. That is how people are who come to church regularly, but are hypocrites inside. The tree looked good from the outside, but it was rotting on the inside.

In his first park, Fred's tent was pitched between two tall trees, one a hickory and the other an oak. He worried a bit about being under trees during thunderstorms. On his eighth night Fred experienced his first thunderstorm in a tent under trees. It was a hot night and rain started coming in through the flaps and Fred had to close them. It was hot, but soon the storm brought much cooler air. The thunder was directly overhead, but seemed very high. No harm came to him. Fred was at the foot of the mountain on the downwind side.

State law forced Fred to move from the park after 15 days so he moved his tent to Big Springs National Park in Van Buren, Missouri on the 14th day of his fast. This is one of the most beautiful springs in the world. According to park literature:

"this is the largest spring in the state, and one of the largest in the world. On an average day, some 278 million gallons of water gush forth from subterranean passages, swelling the nearby Current River. Experiments in which harmless dye is placed into the ground have shown that water travels from as far as 45 miles away through underground passages before coming to the surface at Big Spring. The trip took from 7 to 14 days."
Fred’s first readings during the fast were from the book of Jeremiah. He observed a striking parallel between the way the Jewish nation drifted from God and the way the United States had done the same, especially in the last few decades. People in America were killing their little babies while still in womb by the millions. They were arguing that the fetus was not human until it came out of the womb and breathed air. In light of this Fred thought about what God told Jeremiah:

Jeremiah 1:5 Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I set you apart; I appointed you as a prophet to the nations.

Homosexuality was becoming an honored lifestyle and homosexual men were fighting for the right to become scoutmasters and homosexual men living together were adopting little boys. Lesbians were following the same pattern. Evolution was called science, which, in Fred’s opinion, it is not, it is religion. Meanwhile the Bible and God were driven from the classrooms.

High schools were demonstrating putting condoms on bananas to students and even grade schools were given condoms. One high school in Boulder, Colorado brought in guest speakers from California who told the high school students, some as young as 13, to enjoy sex and not feel guilty about it. And, by the way, forget about those condoms as they take away sensitivity. They also advocated drug use and encouraged the students to experiment with same sex relationships. The Superintendent and principal refused to talk with reporters about the assembly and have invited these
same speakers back for next year; however, they did agree that next year's assembly would be voluntary and not mandatory as this one had been. In a middle school in Houston, Texas, two 14 year olds had sex in the classroom while other students watched.

In another high school in California four different teachers in the same high school were having sex with their students. Talk about a new dimension to sex education!

Unasked for pornographic e-mail solicitations were being sent to the millions to computer users all over the nation and the world. Child porn and pedophiles were on the rise. Fred had looked it up on the web and found out that there were 118 convicted child sex offenders in his home town of about 20,000. No marvel that parents waited with their children at bus stops. Churches were establishing scholarships for homosexuals who wanted to enter the ministry and practicing homosexuals were being ordained as bishops! Couples just started living together without marriage and were not even ashamed. Most new movies and TV programs had couples jumping in bed together on the first date and dating couples who waited even one month to have sex were considered weird! Fred remembered the words of the prophet:

Jeremiah 6:15 *Are they ashamed of their loathsome conduct? No, they have no shame at all; they do not even know how to blush. So they will fall among the fallen; they will be brought down when I punish them,*” says the LORD.
Fred wrote the following verses from Jeremiah into his notebook because they were so strikingly similar to his own nation:

Jeremiah 2:32 Does a maiden forget her jewelry, a bride her wedding ornaments? Yet my people have forgotten me, days without number.

Jeremiah 5:1 “Go up and down the streets of Jerusalem, look around and consider, search through her squares. If you can find but one person who deals honestly and seeks the truth, I will forgive this city.

Jeremiah 5:30-31 “A horrible and shocking thing has happened in the land: The prophets prophesy lies, the priests rule by their own authority, and my people love it this way. But what will you do in the end?

These people of Judah couldn't even go to their prophets and priests because they too were evil and prophesied lies. What was God’s admonition to these wicked people?

Jeremiah 6:16 This is what the LORD says: "Stand at the crossroads and look; ask for the ancient paths, ask where the good way is, and walk in it, and you will find rest for your souls. But you said, 'We will not walk in it.'

Jeremiah 8:7-8 Even the stork in the sky knows her appointed seasons, and the dove, the swift and the thrush observe the time of their migration. But my people do not know the requirements of the LORD. "How can you say, "We are wise, for we have the law of the LORD," when actually the lying pen of the scribes has handled it falsely?

Unfortunately for Judah, they did not listen to Jeremiah and did not repent. Their sin became so bad that God forbade Jeremiah to even pray for them.
Jeremiah 14:11-12 *Then the Lord said to me, “Do not pray for the well-being of this people. Although they fast, I will not listen to their cry; though they offer burnt offerings and grain offerings, I will not accept them. Instead, I will destroy them with the sword, famine and plague.”*

God brought the Babylonians and used them to destroy the city of Jerusalem with its Temple and carried the people away to Babylon. The Babylonian king killed the two sons of King Zedekiah, the king of Judah, before his eyes and then put out Zedekiah’s eyes so that his last visual memory would be the killing of his two sons. King Zedekiah was then taken to Babylon as a prisoner.

Fred wondered if the United States had already crossed the line with God. Was there still time for the nation to repent?

As for himself, Fred was resolved to follow Jeremiah’s advice and “ask for the ancient paths.” He interpreted this as going back to the Bible. Fred asked God to reveal all his truth to him even if it contradicted his previously held convictions and beliefs. He was resolved to give up any and every untrue man-made doctrine in order to please God just as he and Charles gave up the title of Reverend and his special clergy clothes. He often thought of the plea from his young friend, Ted Flynn, who urged the two ministers to strive for unity in answer to Jesus’ prayer in John 17. If it was God’s will for him to enter this debate, he prayed that he would enter the debate with Charles Hoffmeister as much a learner as a teacher. He had already learned from Charles Hoffmeister that he too should give up
titles and special clothes. He felt indebted to Charles for that. He prayed for his opponent that he too would seek real truth.

On the sixteenth day of his fast, numerous house flies began bothering Fred to the point that he decided to get in his car and drive to Van Buren to purchase a fly swatter. There was a heat wave on in southern Missouri with temperatures reaching 105 degrees Fahrenheit! After purchasing the fly swatter, Fred began the drive back to his camp when he noticed a road labeled Skyline Drive. For some reason he decided to explore it.

FRED MEETS REUBEN

About two miles down this road he saw an elderly man standing on the side of the road painting. He drove on by and was exiting back on the road to his camp when the high temperature and the thought of this old man began to bother him. He remembered thinking that it was odd that there was no car with the old man. Fred re-entered Skyline Drive and found the old man. He had collapsed from the heat and didn’t lift his head when Fred stopped his car beside him. Fred got him up, gave him some water. Fred then found out that someone had dropped the old man off that morning and was returning for him later in the afternoon. The old man asked Fred to take him back to Smally’s Motel in Van Buren. Did God send the flies so that Fred could save this man’s life?
Fred had several conversations with the old gentleman, Reuben, over the next few days. Reuben was Jewish and was a retired dentist. After retiring from dentistry, Reuben told Fred that he went back to college and obtained two Masters Degrees, one in art and the other in the religion of Judaism. Reuben was convinced that Fred saved his life so he insisted that Fred take as a gift his choice of all his paintings. Fred selected one of Big Springs which he proudly displays in his home.

Fred and Reuben had several conversations about religion. Fred asked Reuben what he thought about the idea of atonement in Isaiah 53. Reuben, though he was Jewish and Isaiah was a major Jewish prophet, had never read Isaiah. Fred was astonished that here was a Jewish man with a Masters Degree in the religion of Judaism and he had never read Isaiah. Fred had a large print version of the New International version of the Bible and opened it and read the entire chapter with Reuben.

The Bible book of Isaiah was written around 750 B.C. and the 53rd chapter of that book gave a detailed description of how the Messiah would die for the sins of others as a substitute sacrifice. Fred thought it strange that a man with a Masters degree in the religion of Judaism had never read this most astonishing of all the prophecies of the Messiah in all the Old Testament. Reuben was impressed and said that he wanted to study Isaiah 53 in his Hebrew Bible when he returned to Chicago.

The next day Fred returned to Reuben's motel and to his amazement, Reuben had read the first 15 chapters of Matthew. Fred asked
Reuben what he thought of the “Sermon on the Mount,” in Matthew chapters 5, 6 & 7. He then read the part about loving one’s enemies. Reuben said that he could never do this because he had been robbed five times on the public transit in Chicago and that he could never love these men who robbed him. Fred then approached it from the health standpoint. One is healthier both mentally and physically if he follows Jesus’ command and forgives. Fred pointed out some things from a book written by Dr. S. I. McMillan, *None of these Diseases*, which backed up his statement. Reuben then asked about the Nazis, how could he ever forgive them? Fred turned to Romans 12 and pointed out that vengeance belonged to God and that God was much more capable of handling vengeance than human beings.

Fred then asked Reuben if he had ever sinned and he admitted that he had. Then they read

*Isaiah 59:1-2 Surely the arm of the LORD is not too short to save, nor his ear too dull to hear. But your iniquities have separated you from your God; your sins have hidden his face from you, so that he will not hear*

Fred emphasized the highlighted words: *your iniquities have separated you from your God; your sins have hidden his face from you*. Fred pointed out that Reuben’s sins had separated him from God and then asked if he, Reuben, deserved to be forgiven. If God were to forgive Reuben, even though he did not deserve it, why could not Reuben forgive others?
Fred gave Reuben an example from his own life. Fred and another minister had a real issue with each other and became enemies. Fred then remembered Jesus’ command, “love your enemies.” Love in this case does not mean that one has warm loving feelings for his enemy, rather, it means to act loving and do loving things for your enemy.

I John 3:18  *Dear children, let us not love with words or tongue but with actions and in truth.*

Fred knew that this brother loved to eat in a specific local restaurant so Fred went there and bought a $25.00 gift certificate to give him. After purchasing the certificate, Fred looked around and saw this bother with his wife eating at one of the tables in this very restaurant. Fred went over and presented the certificate to the brother. From that time on, Fred and this brother became friends again. Fred pointed out that hate is like fire, it feeds on itself. Love is to hate what water is to fire. How often do two neighbors get offended at one another over some trivial matter which could have been settled quickly with an act of love, but which grows bigger over time until one of them kills the other.

At this point Fred read the crucifixion story to Reuben from Matthew, beginning with chapter 26:36. Jesus had three of his closest friends with him as he prayed in the garden of Gethsemane the very night he was arrested to be crucified. Fred then explained the concept of justice to Reuben and how that Jesus had to die to satisfy God’s absolute justice. They studied it out in Romans chapter three.
Reuben asked if the Old Testament Scriptures said anything about God's justice. Fred explained that both testaments spoke of God's justice.

II Chronicles 12:6 The leaders of Israel and the king humbled themselves and said, "The LORD is just."

Romans 3:25-26 God presented him as a sacrifice of atonement, through faith in his blood. He did this to demonstrate his justice, because in his forbearance he had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished—he did it to demonstrate his justice at the present time, so as to be just and the one who justifies those who have faith in Jesus.

After Fred read Romans 3:25-26, he asked Reuben to count how many times the word just or justice appeared in just two verses. Fred explained that mercy and justice are inherently contradictory. The judge who gave a child rapist probation instead of prison time, had mercy on the rapist, but the judge was not just. If the judge had sentenced the man according to law to the maximum sentence in prison, there would have been justice, but no mercy. In order to uphold justice, Zaleucas did not spare his son or himself.

(You have or will read a full account of Fred's arguments including the story of Zaleucas in the other parts of this novel.)
The only place where justice and mercy can come together is at the foot of the cross where, unlike Zaleucas, giving one of his eyes for his son, Jesus took all our punishment and we go free.

Fred then took Reuben back to Isaiah 53, which was written about 750 years before Jesus was born, and asked him to search this chapter to see if he could find any prophecies of one (the Messiah) taking the punishment for others (mankind). Reuben found the following verses marked with bold print:

Isaiah 53:1-12

4 Surely he took up our infirmities and carried our sorrows, yet we considered him stricken by God, smitten by him, and afflicted.
5 But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed.
6 We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.
10 Yet it was the LORD’s will to crush him and cause him to suffer, and though the LORD makes his life a guilt offering,
11 After the suffering of his soul, he will see the light of life and be satisfied; by his knowledge my righteous servant will justify many, and he will bear their iniquities.
12 Therefore I will give him a portion among the great, and he will divide the spoils with the strong, because he poured out his life unto death, and was numbered with the transgressors. For he bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.
Fred explained that, unfortunately, many Christians did not fully appreciate the justice of God. You hear statements like, “How could a good and just God sent anyone to hell forever?” The real question is, “How could a **just** God save anyone since all of us adults have sinned?” The punishment for sin is death—eternal separation from God! Many Christians parrot the phrase, “Christ died for us,” without understanding it. Because God is **just** and because there was no one in the entire universe capable of taking our sins except God’s Son, Jesus. If Jesus had not died in our place, we’d all go to hell because of God’s justice. But, because Jesus was God in the flesh and because Jesus had no sin, he was more than adequate as a substitute sacrifice for all the sins of all men of all time.

Reuben asked, “So, you are saying the Messiah had to die as a substitute for God to save us and remain just at the same time.”

“Yes, so, back to Jesus’ prayer to escape the cross, because God is just and because all men have sinned, God, with all wisdom, power and knowledge could not find another way to save men. If Jesus had not died to take the punishment we men deserved, none of us could go to heaven and be with God forever. So, God’s answer to Jesus’ prayer was that Jesus must die or send all men to hell forever. Reuben, why do you think Jesus prayed to escape the cross?”

Reuben: “Because of the painful death.”
Fred: “No doubt, Jesus dreaded the physical pain and the emotional pain, but, I think Jesus dreaded something that was far worse, the spiritual pain—the pain of, for the first time ever in all of eternity, being separated from his Father. These are Jesus’ words as he was dying on the cross:

Matthew 27:46 About the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice, “Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?”—which means, “My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?”

“Did the Father really separate himself from His Son at this point? Yes, because Jesus didn’t just take our sin, he became our sin:

II Corinthians 5:21 God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God

We humans are so calloused that separation from God because of our sins doesn’t seem like that big of a deal, but Jesus was horrified and we would be too if we had more of the mind of Jesus.”

Reuben was moved and asked, “In all my Jewish religious upbringing, schooling and study for my Masters Degree in religion, I have never understood the atonement idea which you have so convincingly explained to me. Thank you.”

Fred: “You are welcome, my friend.”

Reuben was 89 years old and he needed time to process these new ideas.
When a person is born again, the righteousness earned by Jesus on the cross is placed on that new born person and God sees him/her as righteous as his Son, Jesus.

Reuben then asked, “But, don’t Christians believe in three Gods?”

“Let me read to you from the Jewish writings in Genesis:

Genesis 1:26 Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground."

“Reuben, look at the three pronouns all referring to God in this verse. They are all plural and all refer to God. In English, this is grammatically incorrect, a singular noun, God, with plural pronouns—us and our. The Hebrew word for God here is plural. So, in Hebrew, it is correct. God, his Son and the Holy Spirit were all there at creation, so you too must believe in three Gods. Actually, God is one, but he manifests himself in three ways.”

Fred left and returned the next afternoon. Fred asked, “Reuben, have you been reading the Bible?

“Yes, I have read all 28 chapters of Matthew. I am surprised that Jesus didn’t claim to be the Messiah anywhere in the book of Matthew.

“Reuben, we have two English words which mean exactly the same thing though they are spelled differently—Messiah and Christ. The Hebrew
word for the anointed one when translated into English is spelled Messiah, while the Greek word for the anointed one when translated into English is spelled Christ. They mean exactly the same thing—the anointed one. So, when Peter announced in Matthew 16:16,

Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

he was proclaiming that Jesus was indeed the Messiah.

“I'm impressed with your knowledge of the Bible. I do have another question. When Jesus said,

Matthew 7:12  *So in everything, do to others what you would have them do to you, for this sums up the Law and the Prophets.*

It seems to me that he was just quoting an ancient Jewish writer.

The next day Fred returned. He had found the ancient Jewish writer’s statement: Talmud, Shabbat 31A “What is hateful to you, do not to your fellow man. That is the entire law; all the rest is commentary.”

Fred said “Reuben, put these two statements side-by-side and tell me what you see that is different.”

“ Oh, I see, the Jewish writer writes in the negative and Jesus stated his rule in the positive.

“You are right.”
The next day Fred returned and continued the discussion with Reuben. Reuben had read all of the books of Matthew, Acts and Hebrews.

Fred: “Reuben, I have a question for you, why don’t Jews offer animal sacrifices as they are commanded to do in their Scriptures?”

Reuben: “The Rabbi told me that they stopped because it was cruelty to animals.”

Fred: “What right did the Rabbis have to change or ignore God’s law?”

Reuben: “That’s a good question.”

Reuben then went back to Chicago, as he said, to read his Hebrew Bible, study out Isaiah 53 and consider the things which Fred shared with him and Fred returned to camp to continue his fast. He never told Reuben that he was fasting.

SPIRITUAL INSIGHTS

Fred found another mountain in Big Springs Park to climb for prayer. He often took off his shoes and socks at these “sacred places,” as Moses and Joshua were both instructed to take off theirs in the presence of God. Though Fred did not see physical evidence of God, he was sure of his spiritual presence.

Fred sometimes met scantily clad attractive women while walking in the park and, of all times in his life, above all, now, he did not want to be guilty of lust. He would turn his head and look elsewhere until they
passed. He wondered what they thought of him. They may have thought that he was rude or that he considered them unattractive since he didn’t take a second look. He observed that if he saw such a woman and then quickly turned away the image quickly and completely vanished from his mind, whereas before, if he looked twice, the image lingered in his mind.

He observed many trees which had been hit by lightning and that they were all big trees. He never found a small tree or sapling which had been hit. He wondered if there was a spiritual lesson here.

Fred observed that he was getting weaker, but was still plenty strong to walk and take care of himself. It was strange that his stomach did not signal any hunger pains after the second and third day. He did not experience hunger again until the 40th day. The 40 day fast might be much easier than he thought. He was glad that he relied on God and not on himself to accomplish this spiritual task. He spent many hours each day reading and praying. He observed one man who sold firewood in the park who would sit for hours in his vehicle doing nothing. Fred wondered how this man stood the boredom of doing nothing for hours.

During the middle of his fast Fred studied the Parable of the Sower in Matthew 13, Mark 4 and Luke 8. Putting it all together, it appeared to him that Jesus preached publicly giving only the parable without the explanation, then explained the parable in plain language to the Twelve Apostles privately.
Mark 4:10-12 When he was alone, the Twelve and the others around him asked him about the parables. He told them, “The secret of the kingdom of God has been given to you. But to those on the outside everything is said in parables so that,” “they may be ever seeing but never perceiving, and ever hearing but never understanding; otherwise they might turn and be forgiven!

Fred thought about this wondering why Jesus did not give the interpretation of his parable to the whole crowd instead of just the Apostles and others around them. Then Fred remembered the statement from the prophet Jeremiah:

Jeremiah 29:13 You will seek me and find me when you seek me with all your heart

Perhaps those in the big crowd were not seeking God with all their heart. Fred felt good about his own efforts at this moment since he was seeking God’s wisdom and truth with all his heart. He remembered the Scripture in Hebrews 11:6 that God rewards those who earnestly seek him. Then he remembered a pertinent Scripture in Luke 13:23-24

Someone asked him, “Lord, are only a few people going to be saved?” He said to them, “Make every effort to enter through the narrow door, because many, I tell you, will try to enter and will not be able to.

He wondered how Robert Schuller in his Crystal Cathedral would have answered the same question: “Are only a few people going to be saved?”

Fred wondered if “make every effort” was not equal to “seeking God with
all your heart.” Translated, did this mean that those who casually and nonchalantly or half heartedly seek God will fail in their efforts? Does this mean that out of all of those who “become Christians” only a few of them will actually make it because most are not serious enough and fail to make every effort to please God? Fred wondered if he, himself, would be willing to lay it all on the line for God. Would he be willing to lay his job on the line if it came to that? Fred continued his reading in Luke in search of more information on this question. Was he interpreting Jesus’ words too literally and not leaving room for grace?

Fred then read Jesus’ requirements for becoming his disciple in

Luke 14:25-33 Large crowds were traveling with Jesus, and turning to them he said: "If anyone comes to me and does not hate his father and mother, his wife and children, his brothers and sisters—yes, even his own life—he cannot be my disciple. And anyone who does not carry his cross and follow me cannot be my disciple.

"Suppose one of you wants to build a tower. Will he not first sit down and estimate the cost to see if he has enough money to complete it? For if he lays the foundation and is not able to finish it, everyone who sees it will ridicule him, saying, ‘This fellow began to build and was not able to finish.’

"Or suppose a king is about to go to war against another king. Will he not first sit down and consider whether he is able with ten thousand men to oppose the one coming against him with twenty thousand? If he is not able, he will send a delegation while the other is still a long way off and will ask for terms of peace. In the same way, any of you who does not give up everything he has cannot be my disciple.

Fred was shocked to see Jesus three times in this one passage saying that if people do not meet my very tough demands that they “cannot” be my disciples. Fred then wondered what Jesus meant by the word “disciple.”
Was he talking about the 12 Apostles or was he using disciple as another term for Christian? Fred remembered Jesus’ words just before he left earth after his resurrection when he said to his followers that they should make **disciples** of all nations (Matthew 28:18-20) so he obviously meant the term to apply to more than just the 12 Apostles. Jesus only called 12 to be Apostles while he calls everyone in the world to become his disciple. Then he remembered a statement in Acts about the word Christian:

Acts 11:25-26 *Then Barnabas went to Tarsus to look for Saul, and when he found him, he brought him to Antioch. So for a whole year Barnabas and Saul met with the church and taught great numbers of people. The disciples were called Christians first at Antioch.*

Fred then looked up the word disciple in his Strong’s concordance. It simply meant pupil or learner. Webster defined disciple as follower. Fred began putting it all together. Was seeking God with all your heart, making every effort, loving God more than family and self and giving up everything for Jesus, as set forth in these Scriptures, all saying essentially the same thing in different words? If God equated disciple with Christian, as he seemed to do in Acts 11, then becoming a disciple or Christian was much more than just saying the “Sinner's Prayer” or “praying Jesus into your heart” or just “getting baptized.” Fred looked in his concordance and discovered that the word disciple was used 294 times to describe Jesus’ followers while he used the word, “Christian,” only three times in the entire Bible.
But, could one not grow in these attributes after one is born again or does one have to have this kind of heart prior to making the commitment to become Jesus’ disciple? Then Fred looked more closely at Jesus statement right in the middle of his discourse in Luke 14:25-33:

"Suppose one of you wants to build a tower. Will he not first sit down and estimate the cost to see if he has enough money to complete it? For if he lays the foundation and is not able to finish it, everyone who sees it will ridicule him, saying, ‘This fellow began to build and was not able to finish.’

Fred pondered this Scripture, was Jesus stopping his discourse on discipleship requirements right in the middle of this section to give lessons on economics and construction of towers or was he using this as an analogy about becoming his follower? It appeared to Fred to be the latter. What does the builder do first, begin construction of his tower, or does he first estimate the cost and see if he has enough money? Obviously, the builder estimates the cost first. So, what is Jesus’ application? Before anyone becomes Jesus’ follower or disciple, or gets saved, born again, that person, if he or she follows Jesus’ instructions here in Luke 14, will count the cost as laid out by our Savior. Is he willing to love God more than family or self? Is she willing to give up everything for Jesus? If not, he should not become Jesus’ follower, in reality, she cannot. Jesus said so three times. Who does Jesus think he is, making such extreme demands? Fred remembered, he is the one with all authority in heaven and on earth (Matthew 28:18-20)! Fred now reconsidered his own conversion. No one
ever went over these Scriptures with him prior to his conversion. Is it possible that he, Fred, a minister, had never really been born again?

The eighteenth day of his fast was extremely hot so Fred got into Current River to cool off. He cut his foot and it became infected. He worried that the fast might have lowered his immune system and that he might have to end the fast to get well. He prayed fervently that God would not allow this to happen. The next day the cut was almost well. Fred took a lesson. He was here to seek God and not to enjoy himself. There would be another time when he could get into the river and enjoy himself, but not now. He was on a spiritual mission and did not want distractions.

On the nineteenth day of his fast, Fred came to the conclusion that he had been a Pharisee about some things. For example, he’d accepted the doctrine of his church that it was a sin to drink wine without really examining the issue from Scriptures. Now that he was alone with God on his fast, he was ready to reexamine everything. He noticed that Jesus’ very first miracle, not the second or third, but the first, was to turn about 150 gallons of water into wine at a wedding feast, (John 2). Paul instructed Timothy to drink a little wine because of his stomach and his frequent illnesses. Even elders and deacons were not forbidden to drink wine, but were warned not to drink too much wine and not to get drunk. God condemned gluttony but not eating in moderation; God condemned drunkenness, but not drinking in moderation. Fred thought back on how
gullible he had been to accept this absolute, teetotal, man-made doctrine of zero wine which had no biblical foundation and how he had helped force it on his membership. He wondered if he would ever have emerged from his stupor if it had not been for his fast. It reminded him of another place in the Bible where religious leaders were making rules where God had made no rules and God called this “things taught by demons:”

I Timothy 4:1-4 The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons. Such teachings come through hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. They forbid people to marry and order them to abstain from certain foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and who know the truth. For everything God created is good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving.

Fred had even preached about this very Scripture being critical of churches which enforced celibacy for its clergy. Fred failed to realize that he was guilty of violating the same principle—making laws where God had given freedom. He was forbidding his members from drinking any wine when Jesus’ first miracle was to make wine! It is fine to marry or to not marry, the Apostle Paul chose not to, while Peter had a wife and took her on his missionary journeys, but woe to that man who makes a law where God didn’t and tries to force it on others. Look at all the woes which have hit the Roman Catholic Church because of pedophile priests. Fred had heard that the Catholic Church has spent nearly two billion, (that is billion spelled with a “B,” ---a thousand million!) dollars in recent years to defend itself against law suits over its priests who have molested children. Think
of the children whose lives have been severely damaged by such treatment by the very ones who were supposed to represent God to them! This was partly brought on because someone made a rule, celibacy, where God gave freedom and then bound their man-made rule on others! Fred was guilty of violating the same principle. He tried to bind the “absolutely no wine” man-made rule on his members. He asked God to forgive him.

On the other hand, Fred in no way wanted to encourage excessive use of alcohol. Too much to drink can suppress one’s inhibitions against sins. It can lead to adultery and sins one would not normally even consider while sober. It can lead to death in car crashes; it can destroy one’s liver and health and the list goes on. Then there are alcoholics who cannot just take one drink. They should be teetotalers.

Fred remembered another Scripture which shed light on the thought of men making up commands as if they were God. Jesus was speaking to the Pharisees and teachers of the law:

**Mark 7:6-7** He replied, "Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you hypocrites; as it is written:‘These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men."

Fred reached the 20th day of his fast which was, for him, a psychological breakthrough. Everything would be downhill from then on because he was more than half way through his fast! Now, with God’s help, he had more confidence than ever that he could really do this.
Much of Fred’s Bible reading and writing was done in the shady areas in front of Big Springs. From here, not only could he hear the sound of the water coming out of the spring, but could also feel the coolness. Few places on earth could compete with its beauty. Perhaps Niagara Falls could in some ways.

Fred struggled to be 100% righteous. He needed a clothesline to dry his clothes after they were washed so that they would not sour. He hated to spend $3.00 for a clothesline at the store. He was walking by the boat launch ramp by the river when he found a ball of string apparently lost there by some fishermen. He took it to his tent with the idea of stringing up a clothesline the next morning. That evening, while meditating in his tent, he began thinking about the string. Someone lost it and may come back looking for it. Fred took the string back to the place where he found it and tied it up to a limb so that it could be easily seen. Then he thought someone else may see it and steal it, but this gives him no right to take it. He that is unfaithful in small things would be unfaithful in great things.

About this time Fred’s wife, Patricia, came down to the park to spend some time with him. Satan never sleeps. After Jesus fasted forty days and nights and was on a spiritual high, Satan was there to tempt him. Patricia and Fred had hired a private detective to investigate the possible theft of one of their twin daughters which were born 14 years earlier. The doctor showed Fred a dead baby but Patricia thought that perhaps he
showed Fred someone else’s dead baby. Patricia watched a TV program about people stealing babies to adopt out for money which took place about the same time as their twin birth. Fred visited that town in Murray, Kentucky the previous year and discovered some unexplained mysteries concerning their “dead” baby girl. He still had a newspaper clipping of the birth of twins with one being stillborn. Reflecting back to the time of the burial, he and a college friend of his went with the undertaker to bury the dead baby. Fred decided to open the little casket and show the baby to his college friend, Tom. The undertaker refused to allow it. Fred was young and hotheaded and insisted that the baby was his and that he had every right to open the casket! The undertaker absolutely refused arguing that the baby was not prepared for viewing. Finally, after prolonged arguing, Fred gave up. Fred and Tom left before the actual burial. When Fred returned last year to find the grave, it was not to be found. There was no record of the burial at the cemetery. Fred then went to the funeral home and looked for the record of his daughter’s burial. The original undertaker was dead and a different man now owned the business. The new owner was happy to open the books for Fred. They found the records of that date and found other funerals listed before and after that date, but there was no mention of Fred’s baby girl. On hearing this, Patricia wrote to the State of Kentucky for a death certificate for their little girl. There was no death certificate on file. According to Kentucky state law, there should have been a death certificate. Why was there not one?
Patricia told Fred about a conversation with the private investigator in which he told her that he would lie to get the doctor's records of that birth. Patricia didn’t like the idea of him lying, but didn’t object. She told Fred and Fred objected. “I didn’t come down here to fast for 40 days and nights in order to draw closer to God and then pay someone hundreds of dollars to go and lie for me. Even if we never find our missing daughter, we must not allow him to lie.” Fred felt like Satan himself was bringing this temptation in an effort to bring him down and wash out any good the fast might have achieved. Patricia called the investigator and instructed him not to lie so the investigator was not able to obtain the doctor’s records.

Fred had now reached the twenty fourth day of his fast. He did feel weaker, but was still walking about four miles a day. Fred had been walking up to the top of a nearby mountain to pray each day. Then he heard about a woman who was bitten on the toe by a copperhead snake on this same mountain. Fred thought about it. If he got bitten by a poisonous snake, he might have to end his fast early and he did not want to do that. So he stopped climbing the mountain and found safer places to go for quiet times with God.

An elderly couple set up a tent next to Fred’s tent. The old man left to go pay for his camp site and left the old woman to blow up the mattress with her mouth. When he came back, she began yelling at him for leaving
her to blow up the mattress. Then she changed the subject and yelled at him for not bringing her hair dryer. Fred thought about their situation. Here they came for relaxation and fun and they allow petty stuff to ruin their vacation time.

Fred meditated on this situation and thought about how it was typical behavior for too many people. If pleasantness could be purchased in a bottle, think how it would sell. It might bring $1000.00 a bottle! These people who came here for fun and relaxation are, instead, experiencing anger, unhappiness, displeasure and hate. Sadly, one cannot purchase pleasantness in a bottle. It has to be learned by applying the principles in God’s word. If they would just study out and apply the teachings of Jesus in the Sermon on the Mount they might have that pleasantness. Fred gathered his courage and went over to meet the angry old couple. They greeted him warmly. The lady was especially warm, gentle and kind to Fred. Fred thought how often family members save their kindness for strangers while showing bitterness and a host of ugly emotions to those family members closest to them. If one has to be nasty to someone, would it not make more sense to show nastiness to strangers while saving those kind and loving words for closest family members?

Fred loved to sing Christian hymns and spiritual songs. On Sundays he visited little country churches which were located near his camp site. Fred’s voice prior to the fast was in the higher bass range. He knew how to
sight read music and could sing either bass or tenor. By twenty five days into the fast, Fred noticed that his voice was shifting to a noticeably higher range. He could even sing in the first tenor range, but could no longer reach down deep to those bass notes. He did not like this. He always wanted a deeper voice and loved the bass part. One good thing about these forty days alone was that he could go where no one could hear him and sing as loud and as long as he liked. He did a considerable amount of singing and, as a result, the quality of his now high voice improved.

Fred increased his walk to about seven miles a day at this point in his fast. He noticed considerable faint headedness when he bent over to pick up sticks then stood back up again. This day Fred memorized the song “He Lives,” by Alfred Ackley. Following this Fred was on a spiritual high. He decided to sing his prayer to God making up the words and melody as he went. The words and melody came as fast as Fred could sing. Fred thought the words were wonderful and the melody was the sweetest he’d ever heard. He wished that he had a tape recorder because he was afraid that he could never reproduce again what he had just done.

It was cloudy all day. That evening, when he went to bed, Fred could hear thunder high overhead. It didn’t concern him much until there was a lightning strike very close. Fred’s tent was right under a very large tree. Fred got up and moved his tent to a safer spot. Fred had avoided the snake infested mountain and now he was moving away from a tree in a
thunderstorm. Some might accuse him of a lack of trust in God. Surely God would not allow lightning to strike his servant while on a 40 day fast, Fred thought. But, then on the other hand, Jesus refused to leap off the Temple saying that it was wrong to put God to the test.

Fred took a walk through some of the stores in a little country town. It occurred to him later that he did not have a single spiritual thought while in those stores with the exception of deciding to buy his wife a nice gift to honor her for her cooperation in this fast. He even thought of going by a local airport to watch the airplanes taking off and landing, but decided against it. He was here on a spiritual mission and did not want to allow his mind to be distracted from spiritual matters. He weighed himself on one of the scales in a store. He had dropped from around 190 to 156 pounds.

Fred wondered what he should do if evil men were breaking into his home or were in some way about to do harm to him or his family. Would the teachings of Jesus demand that he stand by and allow his wife or daughter to be raped? Then he remembered two pertinent passages which seem to shed light on this question: One:

Luke 12:39  *But understand this: If the owner of the house had known at what hour the thief was coming, he would not have let his house be broken into.*

And the second one,
Luke 22:35-38  Then Jesus asked them, "When I sent you without purse, bag or sandals, did you lack anything?" “Nothing,” they answered. He said to them, “But now if you have a purse, take it, and also a bag; and if you don't have a sword, sell your cloak and buy one. It is written: 'And he was numbered with the transgressors'; and I tell you that this must be fulfilled in me. Yes, what is written about me is reaching its fulfillment. “The disciples said, "See, Lord, here are two swords." “That is enough,” he replied.

Fred concluded that God would expect him to defend his home against evil men.

Fred read:

I Peter 5:5 Young men, in the same way be submissive to those who are older. All of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another, because, “God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble.”

Prior to his fast, Fred did not personally know any Christians who had gone on a forty day and night fast and he only knew of three in the Bible—Moses, Elijah and Jesus. It came to Fred that he must guard against the temptation of Satan to feel in any way superior to his fellow Christians because he did this forty day fast. Then another Scripture came to his mind from the words of Jesus:

Matthew 6:16-18 "When you fast, do not look somber as the hypocrites do, for they disfigure their faces to show men they are fasting. I tell you the truth, they have received their reward in full. But when you fast, put oil on your head and wash your face, so that it will not be obvious to men that you are fasting, but only to your Father, who is unseen; and your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you

This put the issue in a totally different light. If a true Christian did do a forty day fast, he would not brag about it, in fact, he would try to hide it from others by putting oil on his head and washing his face so that his
fellow men would not even know that he was fasting. Fred realized that he
would have no way of knowing which of his fellow Christians had fasted
forty days so he resolved to treat all of them with respect as though they
had done such a fast and, therefore, there was no reason for him to feel in
any way superior to any of them. Before he started the fast, Fred had
instructed his wife, Patricia, to tell as few people as possible about his fast,
but she was to lie to no one.

Day 27, Fred's weight loss seemed to be mostly from his stomach,
legs and perhaps his face. For some reason Fred could not now sleep on his
side without shutting off the blood supply to his arms and hands. He had
not had this problem before. He had to learn to sleep on his back. A new
problem developed in Fred’s jaws. When he went to bed at night, his jaws
involuntarily closed tightly to the point of discomfort. He could open his
jaws but it was a strain to hold them open so he would relax and they
would close tightly again. It had been twenty seven days since he had
chewed anything. He reasoned that this might be God’s way of keeping his
jaw muscles strong.

Fred called his wife this evening. She gave him a report from the
private detective. He went to the graveyard and confirmed that there is no
record of their daughter being buried there. He then went to the funeral
home and confirmed Fred’s finding that there was no entry of their
daughter in his books. He then obtained the hospital records and they did
show multiple births with one being stillborn. He then searched for the doctor’s records and learned that they were all burned in a million dollar fire. So, even if Fred had authorized the detective’s lie, it would not have helped the investigation. Satan faced another defeat in trying to tempt Fred and Patricia to authorize a lie.

Because Fred was fasting from television, newspapers, radio, the world wide web and anything else which would divert his attention from things spiritual he began thinking of the evil and the good which comes from modern media. It is true that television, radio, the web were being used to spread the gospel. Sadly, however, it seemed that Satan was much more effective in using these new tools to spread evil. Fiction had become very effective in eroding the morals of the nations. TV programs made heroes of homosexuals and villains of those who stood for Biblical principles. Couples living together without marriage were portrayed as honorable and nothing to be ashamed of in any way. Millions of sites of porn appeared everywhere on the web. Child predators had a new and very effective tool to seek out their victims.

The public schools became the domain of Satan. Moral teaching all but disappeared from public schools and the teaching of godless evolution replaced it with the theory of evolution being taught as a fact meaning that all life on earth had a common ancestor and had arisen purely by blind chance without any help from God. Students began killing students and
teachers. Teachers, both male and female, began having sex with their students. As early as 1972, the president of NEA announced a caucus of homosexual teachers at the NEA convention in New Jersey. In the September 1995 issue of NEA TODAY, page34 the following was one of many resolutions approved by that organization:

**B–9 Sexual Orientation Education**

...a. Accurate portrayal of the roles and contributions of gay, lesbian, and bisexual people throughout history, with acknowledgement of their sexual orientation.

b. The acceptance of diverse sexual orientation and the awareness of sexual stereotyping whenever sexuality and/or tolerance of diversity is taught. ...

d. Support for the celebration of a Lesbian and Gay history month as a means of acknowledging the contributions of lesbians, gays, and bisexuals throughout history.

Meanwhile, the things public schools were supposed to teach suffered. Students graduated from high schools without being ready for college and not being prepared to enter the work force. Some could not read at a third grade level. Companies had to set up training schools to train newly graduated students before they could do minimal skills like math and reading. The teachers’ unions fiercely defended their domain with little
regard for the welfare of students. It became all but impossible to fire incompetent teachers because of the teachers’ unions, especially the NEA. Fred feared for the future of the United States when students brought up under these conditions took charge of the nation.

Public schools were pushing evolution and sex education. Girls could get abortions without their parents' permission or knowledge. Fred identified with the prophet Jeremiah who sounded warnings to an evil nation about their coming downfall, and worried about what God would do to the United States.

Another important consideration when considering modern media is the waste of time. Fred had observed how TV had a near hypnotic effect on him. He was a news hound and would turn on the TV in the morning to get the world and national news. The announcer would inform the listeners that such and such would come on at 45 past the hour and so on and Fred would think that he must hear about these most interesting items. Before he realized it, he had wasted much time. He determined to make a rule for himself when he ended his fast—absolutely no TV prior to noon on any day, even when on vacation. How much more time was wasted by children playing video games and huge amounts of time wasted by others surfing the web, reading blogs and such like. Most people fail to realize just how precious their time really is. We all must give account to God on how we use that precious, limited time.
At this point Fred decided to stop drinking juice and to go on a water-only fast. This lasted about 37 hours. Interestingly, Fred did not miss or hunger for the juice, but he became so weak that he could barely walk and realized that, if he continued, he would be bedfast. He could not let that happen when he was far from home and friends so he returned to his juice fast and his strength quickly returned.

Fred decided to read the New Testament through while on this fast without any commentaries. He did not object to good commentaries, but, at this time, he wanted nothing but the pure word of God speaking to his heart. He was reading in II Peter 1:5 that he should add to his faith goodness. Hearing the word without putting it into practice was without value, so Fred decided to leave the camp and go out and try to find some way of helping others. He found a man at an intersection trying to hitch a ride. He picked him up and took him to his home. The man was trying to get home by 3:00 p.m. so he could keep his grandchildren so that his wife could go to work at Brown Shoe Company in Poplar Bluff. Fred invited them to church.

Leaving there and back on the highway, Fred spotted a car stopping by the side of the road with the flashers on. He stopped and the young lady driver told him she was out of gas and asked if he would take her down the road to a service station for gas. Fred took her to the gas station and brought her back to her car and helped her to get it started. He invited
her to church and found out that she didn’t go to church anywhere. She was on her way to Poplar Bluff for a doctor appointment. Fred went out to do good in obedience to the Scripture and God gave him two people to help on the same afternoon!

The next day Fred continued his reading in I John. How could he, Fred, know for sure that he knows God?

I John 2:3-4 We know that we have come to know him if we obey his commands. The man who says, “I know him,” but does not do what he commands is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

Does this mean that Fred can obey some of Jesus’ commands and that he, Fred, can pick which ones to ignore and still be accepted by God? One reason Fred was re-reading all the New Testament is that he wanted to be certain that he was not missing any of Jesus’ commands. If he obeyed the command to love his wife, an easy command to obey, and deliberately disobeyed the command to be sexually pure, would God be happy with him? The tough commands, he decided, are the ones which separate the sincere from the hypocrites. He decided to look for those toughest commands as he read through the New Testament. Perhaps Jesus’ command to love one’s enemies might rank right at the top with, for Fred at least, the command to be sexually pure and holy was a constant challenge.

Fred had earlier noticed how the news media followed the children of the elite. President Clinton’s daughter and the twin daughters of
President Bush were often in the news as were the daughters of President Obama. They were considered special because of their parents. Fred was reflecting on this as he read:

_I John 3:1 How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God! And that is what we are! The reason the world does not know us is that it did not know him_

We Christians are not children of Presidents or British royalty or of famous movie stars, no, much, much better than any of that, we are children of God! Now, Fred thought, does that not suggest something about my behavior? Since I am a child of God, should I not behave accordingly? What does God himself think about this relationship? Most religious people don’t seem to think much about this it. Fred wondered how most Christians would react if he, Fred, walked up and introduced himself to them by saying, “Hi, I'm Fred. I am God's son.” By calling us his children, God is lavishing his love on us. Lavish suggests an abundance of God’s love being poured over our heads.

Another verse on which Fred mediated was:

_II Corinthians 10:5 We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ._

Satan tries to make inroads on us through our thoughts. Just after reading this verse, Fred was walking down the road past another camp site on which were camped two young men and one young lady. Fred thought about them and imagined that she was married to one of them and that if
her husband left for a while that she would quickly jump in the bed with the other man. Fred quickly recognized that this was a wicked and sinful thought. He did not know them and had not talked with them. He immediately repented and asked God to forgive him. Thereafter, when thoughts like this started to arise in Fred’s mind, he would remember the II Corinthians verse above and recite Philippians 4:8 in his mind,

Philippians 4:8 Finally, brothers, whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable—if anything is excellent or praiseworthy—think about such things.

Then he remembered I Corinthians 13:7 that true love does not ascribe evil motives to others when there is any other possible interpretation.

Fred read the entire New Testament during the fast, not primarily to make preparations to teach others, but to shape up his own heart for God’s service. He was constantly asking, “What is God saying to me, Fred?” How can I, Fred, be different and act differently after reading this?

The subject that attracted Fred’s attention as he finished the New Testament was the topic of deceit. Three related Scriptures in Revelation were:

Revelation 21:8 But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars—their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.”

Revelation 21:27 Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb’s book of life.
Revelation 22:15 *Outside are the dogs, those who practice magic arts, the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood.*

In Rev. 21:8, God did not say that all murderers, or that all the vile would have their place in the fiery lake of burning sulfur, but did say that **all liars** would have their place in the fiery lake of burning sulphur! God must feel extremely strong about lying. Then in Rev 21:7, the deceitful cannot enter heaven, and again in Rev 22:15 **everyone who loves and practices falsehood** is outside heaven with all the other wicked people. Then Fred remembered that the people of ancient Jerusalem became so deceitful that God had his prophet Jeremiah to say:

*Jeremiah 5:1* "Go up and down the streets of Jerusalem, look around and consider, search through her squares. If you can find but one person who deals honestly and seeks the truth, I will forgive this city.

To make it practical, Fred began remembering all the times he had been deceitful. When he sold or traded a car which had mechanical problems which he did not disclose to the buyer, he was deceitful. He was selling his integrity for a few hundred dollars. Was not his integrity worth far more than that? What about the times he exaggerated his expenses on his income tax returns? Fred was determined to examine every area of his life to make sure that he was totally honest. He thought, “It will cost me financially, but look at the rewards!” Then he considered the alternative of being dishonest and facing the certainty of hell and there was no
question of which way to proceed. He would from that time on strive to be 100% honest and true.

Having completed the reading of the entire New Testament, Fred then decided to read the entire Sermon on the Mount (Matthew 5, 6, & 7) once a day for the next ten days. Fred had taken courses in college on the intellectual history of the world during which he was directed to read the best literature from every civilization on the whole earth. Then he had another course on the intellectual history of the United States. Nothing he had read in any of these courses came close to being compared to the high level of the Sermon of Jesus in Matthew chapter 5, 6 & 7! Each time he read it his mind focused on a different topic.

After reading all three chapters on one of these days, Fred’s attention went back to:

Matthew 5:14 “You are the light of the world. A city on a hill cannot be hidden.

Fred focused on the word “the.” Jesus didn’t say you are “a” light of the world, but you are “the” light of the world, meaning you followers of Jesus are the only light of the world. You are the only hope for billions of people who have never been born again. God does not use angels to preach the gospel, but uses his disciples to tell the good news to the lost. Fred meditated on what an awesome responsibility rests on each disciple. We are responsible for preaching the gospel to the people in our generation. If we fail, what chance do they have?
The next day after completing the three chapters, Fred thought about the section of the sixth chapter on worrying. From Matthew 6:25-34, Jesus used the words “worry” or “worrying” seven times warning his followers not to worry. Worrying can cause mental illness and unhappiness for the worrier and those whom he or she torments. It destroys joy, one of the fruits of the Spirit. What good can worrying ever do?

The next day, after reading his chapters in Matthew, Fred focused on:

Matthew 5:13 "You are the salt of the earth. But if the salt loses its saltiness, how can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled by men

What was Jesus’ warning about here? He was warning us to not lose our saltiness. In the times before refrigerators, people kept their meat from spoiling by using salt. Fred’s grandfather would kill hogs in the winter time, cut off the hams and place them in a large wooden box and cover them with salt. Months later, even in the hot days of July and August, they could get a ham from the wooden box to eat and it was as good as a fresh ham. What is the application? Fred thought that Christians are God’s only means of getting the gospel to the lost people of the world and, if Christians stop doing that, it is like the salt has lost its saltiness. How can a Christian live next door to an unsaved person and never invite that person over for a meal and talk to him or her about Jesus, or how can a
Christian work side by side with a lost person and never communicate the gospel to them? Fred remembered the words of the song, “You Never Mentioned Him to me:”

When in the better land before the bar we stand,
How deeply grieved our souls would be;
If any lost one there should cry in deep despair,
“You never mentioned him to me.”

Chorus:
“You never mentioned him to me,
You helped me not the light to see;
You met me day by day and knew I was astray,
Yet, you never mentioned him to me!”

Fred woke up around midnight on the 37th day of his fast and began the new day with prayer. He liked to start every new day with prayer. It was cold and his shoulders were aching from the cold. He put on a coat which his wife brought him, got back in his sleeping bag and got warm. He awoke at 7:00 a.m., got up and built a fire. There were only three campers left in the camp.

Fred noticed that wood burned at different rates depending on its kind. Cedar burned most rapidly with pine close behind. Sycamore was unusual in that, once on fire, the sycamore log would not go out even when removed from the rest of the wood which was burning. One could have a big piece of firewood from a Sycamore tree, set it on fire, then
remove it from the fire and it would not go out until completely burned up and all that would be left was a pile of very fine ashes. That reminded Fred of the power of addiction to sin. Once it gets a foothold on a human being, it will not relent until that person is destroyed body, soul and spirit. Fred had been told that crack cocaine was like that—one experiment, one use and the helpless victim was addicted. From then on that person would steal from his own mother for another fix. As one person put it, if one makes a free choice to try crack cocaine, then that will be the last free act they will ever make. From then on they are a slave to the drug.

It was August 25, the 38th day of Fred’s fast. On his walk, Fred noticed that the maple trees had already dropped a large number of their leaves. He didn’t know that the leaves dropped that soon. It reminded him that summer was almost over as was his fast. Fred was the only camper left in his camp. He missed the other campers even though he didn’t know them. It made him realize how people need each other.

On the 39th day of his fast, Fred moved to a camp closer to his home. He set his tent up again in this new location. That night it rained hard and turned cold. Fred’s tent leaked. The foot of his sleeping bag was soaked with water and the rain kept pouring in through the seams. The directions warned the user not to stretch the tent too tight as the tent would tend to shrink and leak at the seams. It had rained several times before and Fred thought the tent was through shrinking. He was wrong. He
had a miserable night. He could not stretch out in his sleeping bag without getting his feet wet. The next morning he took his wet sleeping bag and clothes to a dryer and dried them.

This was the 40th day of Fred's fast and he said to himself, “Praise God. With the strength he has given me, I've almost made it.” He re-read the Sermon on the Mount and this time focused on what the world calls the “Lord’s prayer.”

Matthew 6:13  *And lead us not into temptation,*  
*but deliver us from the evil one*

It appeared to Fred that he himself should be a part of the answer to this petition by avoiding areas and places where he was weakest. He had known about a church secretary who was committing adultery with her minister who was her boss. Her husband found out and they moved to another church. She applied to be secretary for that church. Not a wise move, he thought. He knew of a man who had served as treasurer for his church. He was caught stealing church money. He repented and was forgiven. Should that church or any church use him as treasurer again? Obviously, the answer is no. It would not be wise to put these people into situations where again they were most vulnerable to temptation. This did not mean that the Christians had not forgiven them. It merely meant that Christians were helping to look out for each other’s spiritual welfare. Fred determined to take stock of his own sins and how he could avoid placing himself in situations in which he might give in to temptation. One
immediate application for Fred would be to be careful what TV shows and movies he allowed himself to see.

Fred had his favorite restaurant selected for his first meal in 40 days. His fast was scheduled to end at midnight. He called and found out that his favorite restaurant was closing at midnight, the exact time his fast was to end. The devil tempted him to shorten his fast one hour so he could eat there. After all, it would already be midnight in the Eastern Time Zone, he thought. The devil was constantly trying to get Fred to compromise. Fred would not do it! He decided to just eat at a less desirable restaurant. Fred weighed himself on the 40th day. He weighed 148 pounds, down 42 pounds from his 190 pounds prior to the 40 day fast.

On this last day of his fast, Fred read:

Luke 12:1 Meanwhile, when a crowd of many thousands had gathered, so that they were trampling on one another, Jesus began to speak first to his disciples, saying: “Be on your guard against the yeast of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. It occurred to Fred that the only place where Satan could recruit genuine hypocrites was in church, therefore, he should be even more alert to this kind of temptation. One of the members of the Missouri State Board of Education belonged to a church which preached against drinking any kind of alcoholic beverages. This man liked his alcohol but could not go into a store and buy it for fear that he might be seen by a member of his church. So, he would go into a store, steal a bottle off the shelf, sneak it into the
restroom and drink it there. He was caught and arrested which demonstrated the truth in the following Scripture:

Numbers 32:23 "But if you fail to do this, you will be sinning against the Lord; and you may be sure that your sin will find you out"

This verse, if truly understood and believed, can be the best antidote for hypocrisy that one could hope to have. Ted Hansen on Dateline is making this come true with his program “To Catch A Predator.” Adults go on the web and pose as children and invite these child predators over to have sex. When they arrive, they are met with TV crews and their faces appear on national television. Their secret is out in a big way! They are arrested by police when they leave. Their sin has found them out! Hallelujah!

Fred decided not to set his tent up one the last night as his fast would end at midnight anyway and his tent was still somewhat wet inside from the night before. He slept in his car. This night he was parked in a commuter parking lot because he decided not to return to his home until the end of the fast. It was so different. There was traffic noise all evening, loud trucks, sirens, screeching wheels, horns, and the like. Most of the sounds during the first 39 nights in the parks and woods were wild animals. It was so peaceful back there. Fred’s blood pressure prior to the fast was 140 over 90. At the end of his fast it was 100 over 60.

Fred remembered reading about an experiment in Maryland in which they took several people from the insane asylum who were
considered incurable on a two week camp so far back in the woods that the only sounds to be heard were the sounds of nature. They were completely away from all the sounds of police, ambulance and fire engines sirens, bells and telephones and traffic noises. They were in the middle of God’s creation. They were brought back after two weeks and in the weeks following this excursion, a significant number of the “incurable” people were released from the institution!

After the fast ended, Fred took his wife on a short vacation then returned to his ministry. His question had been answered. He would, indeed, be willing to debate Charles Hoffmiester.

Appendix B THIRD AND FOURTH NIGHTS OF DEBATE

3rd. Night of the debate

Eternal Security---Once saved, born again, that person cannot be lost.

Hoffmiester affirms, Clark denies

The moderator read the proposition and then invited Charles Hoffmiester to speak. Charles decided against re-opening the topic from the previous night, instead, he went right into the topic of this night’s debate.

“Ladies and gentlemen, it is with a deep sense of humility that I stand before you tonight to defend the proposition just read by our moderator. I have learned to have deep respect for Fred Clark and his scholarship. If you remember the first night of the discussion, my first
Scripture was John 3:16. I’m going to start my defense of the proposition with the same Scripture. I do believe that Bible teaches eternal security. Once you are born again Satan can’t get you. You may sin, but, as a child of God, you are knee deep in grace. Here is John 3:16:

“For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.”

We have God’s promise that the believer shall not perish but have what—Eternal life. How long is eternal life? Is it 10 minutes, 10 days or is it eternal?”

“My second Scripture is John 5:24. I like the way the King James words this one.

“I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life.”

My point here is the same as with John 3:16. The one who hears and believes hath (present tense) everlasting life. Not get it when he goes to heaven, if he goes to heaven. To make it even more certain, he adds, “and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.”

It is impossible for them to be condemned because God said “shall not come into condemnation.”

“I think I could sit down right now and my case would be made, but to make it even more certain if that is possible, I’ll add another Scripture:
Again, Jesus promises, “they shall never perish.” For further assurance he then says, “no one can snatch them out of my hand.” And, as if that were not assurance enough, he said, “no one can snatch them out of my Father’s hand.” I know that I have not used all my time, but I’ve made my points and I now wait with open heart to learn what Fred has to say.”

With that, Charles sat down and Fred Clark came up for the rebuttal.

“Charles, Ladies and Gentlemen, it is an honor to stand before you tonight and defend what I believe to be the truth. Charles is a very worthy defender of his position and he has set forth his position with clarity and brevity. He has shown the impossibility of the believer being lost and I want all of you here tonight to know that I agree with Charles 100% on this--a true believer in the Bible sense of the word will not, cannot be lost; however, it is important to ask the right question. The right question in this context is not can a believer be lost, that's impossible. The right question is can a believer lose his faith and become an unbeliever?

Charles presented this Scripture:

John 10:27-30 My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me. I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; no one can snatch them out of my hand. My Father, who has given them to me, is greater than all; no one can snatch them out of my Father’s hand. I and the Father are one.”
John 5:24  "I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life

This verse shows clearly that the believer has eternal life. To make the point clear, I will stay with the KJV on this as Charles did. Please consider the following verse from the same book, the gospel of John and same version, KJV.

John 3:36  Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him."

Fred continued, “Does this mean that the unbeliever cannot be saved? Can the unbeliever become a believer? The Bible here states emphatically that the unbeliever “shall not see life.” Does this mean that it is impossible for this person to ever see life? (Fred presented the chart and was pointing to the left hand lower corner and the arrow pointing up to the right hand top with the words “shall not see life.”)
“Again the important question is: Can the unbeliever become a believer? To be sure, as long as he remains an unbeliever, he shall not see life, but the wrath of God remains on him. We have numerous examples in the Bible of unbelievers becoming believers. I have here on the chart the story of the conversion of the Ethiopian who became a believer. There are numerous statements like “many of the Corinthians who heard him believed and were baptized,” Acts 18:8.

“Now, the real question is not, can a believer be lost, he cannot. The real question is can a believer become an unbeliever? Do we have any Bible examples of just that? Yes, we do.”

I Timothy 1:19-20 *holding on to faith and a good conscience. Some have rejected these and so have shipwrecked their faith. Among them are Hymenaeus*
The names of two believers who became unbelievers are Hymenaeus and Alexander. What did they do? They shipwrecked their faith. I am still thankful to Charles for teaching us about the words believe and faith. There is no difference except believe is a verb and faith is a noun. In the Greek, Charles tells us they are cognates and relate exactly to our English words believe and belief. Their faith was shipwrecked; hence, they became unbelievers.’

“Look at another verse from the chart, Hebrews 3:12-13, to nail it down:”

Hebrews 3:12-13 See to it, brothers, that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be hardened by sin’s deceitfulness.

“First, this warning is given to believers. We know because he calls them brothers. If it was impossible for these believers to become unbelievers, the inspired writer would never have given such a warning. It seems to me that if it was impossible for them to become unbelievers, this Scripture would make no sense at all. Why warn them about something that was impossible for it to happen?”

“Now I will turn to a more important question, what constitutes a true believer in the Bible context? When one stays within the context of
the Bible, he will find that he cannot separate **belief** from **obedience**.
They are one and the same, for proof of this read with me

Hebrews 3:18-19, *And to whom did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.*

Those Jews who followed Moses out of Egyptian bondage were not able to enter God’s rest because of their unbelief. How do we know? They disobeyed. The point in this Scripture is that proof of their unbelief was their disobedience.” The point being that, had they believed, they would have obeyed.

“Let’s make it practical. If you truly **believe** that the bite of a rattlesnake can make you very ill and maybe even kill you, it will show in your actions. You will not be playing with that animal in the same way you play with the family dog. If these Israelites had believed, they would have obeyed, unless they were like the demons:

James 2:19 *You believe that there is one God. Good! Even the demons believe that—and shudder.*

We have one entire chapter in the Bible describing saving faith, Hebrews 11. We could refer to this chapter as the “Faith Hall of Fame” because it lists the human beings who had the greatest faith. In every instance it connects their faith to an action word, a verb. For example:
Hebrews 11:7 *By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith.*

In this one instance six verbs are connected to Noah’s faith. The principle one was, “built.” Why did Noah build an Ark? He was warned about a flood, but it is possible that the pre-flood world had never seen rain, (Genesis 2:5)? Yet Noah believed enough to take the warning and act. If one truly believes, he or she will act. Failure to act comes from lack of faith or believing.”

“Let us look at Abraham who ranked among the very first in faith:

Hebrews 11:8 *By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went, even though he did not know where he was going.*

By faith Abraham **obeyed and went**, action words. By faith Abraham **offered** Isaac. I could go on. There are 84 verbs connected to the faith of the great people of God in this chapter..

One more Scripture on this topic and then I’ll move on:

*I Thessalonians 1:7-10 and give relief to you who are troubled, and to us as well. This will happen when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven in blazing fire with his powerful angels. He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power on the day he comes to be glorified in his holy people and to be marveled at among all those who have believed. This includes you, because you believed our testimony to you.*
Notice that those who do not **obey** the gospel will be punished with everlasting destruction whereas the believers, who obey, will marvel at the Lord.”

Fred went back to the chart with arrows showing the believer becoming an unbeliever and the unbeliever becoming a believer, with the full biblical understanding of the full meaning of **believer** as pointed out in Hebrews 11.

“Someone may ask, Preacher, can you show us in the Bible where someone did actually fall from grace? Yes I can.

*Galatians 5:4  You who are trying to be justified by law have been alienated from Christ; you have fallen away from grace*

The same verse in the King James Version:

*Galatians 5:4  Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by law; ye are fallen from grace.*

I would make two points here. One, a person cannot fall off the roof of a house unless he is first on the roof. One cannot fall from grace unless he has grace in the first place. Two, he didn't say these people might have, or, theoretically could fall from grace, but they, “have,” (past tense) fallen away from grace or from grace as the KJV states. Two more Scriptures, then I want to hear want my good friend, Charles, has to say:

*II Peter 2:20-22  If they have escaped the corruption of the world by knowing our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and are again entangled in it and overcome, they are worse off at the end than they were at the beginning. It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than to have*
known it and then to turn their backs on the sacred command that was passed on to them. Of them the proverbs are true: "A dog returns to its vomit," and, "A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud."

There is no question that these people were saved. They had escaped the corruption of the world by knowing our Lord and Savior. There is no question that they were lost in the end. They would be in a better position on judgment day had they never known the way of righteousness.

Hebrews 6:4-6 It is impossible for those who have once been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift, who have shared in the Holy Spirit, who have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the coming age, if they fall away, to be brought back to repentance, because to their loss they are crucifying the Son of God all over again and subjecting him to public disgrace.

It would be difficult to argue that these folks were not saved. The writer states in five different ways that these folks were unquestionably saved:

(1) they had been enlightened; (2) they tasted the heavenly gift; (3) they shared in the Holy Spirit; (4) they tasted the goodness of the word of God; (5) and the powers of the coming age. If one would argue that the word “tasted” meant less than saved, let him remember that Jesus tasted death for everyone (Hebrews 2:9). Did Jesus just nibble at death or did he fully die?
The next part of the verse describes a totally lost person. They have fallen away. It is impossible to bring that person back to repentance. Without repentance, all will perish in the very words of Jesus:

Luke 13:3  *I tell you, no! But unless you repent, you too will all perish.*

Furthermore, they are subjecting Jesus to public disgrace. This sounds like a warning with teeth to me. Let us again give our attention to my good friend Charles.”

With these words Fred sat down and Charles came to the podium.

"Ladies and gentlemen, I slept but two hours last night. I spent the remainder of the time praying and meditating on what Fred taught us last night. I'm now convinced that Fred taught the truth last night and that I did not. I now have come to believe that it is false to teach that one is saved by faith alone.

“As for what Fred taught tonight, that a believer can lose his or her faith, it seems to me to be the truth, and I don’t know how to honestly refute it, but, I do want time to more fully consider it. As I told you last night, my bishops have threatened to bring me up on heresy charges and I fully expect they will for what I have already said. I asked them for help in refuting what Fred taught last night. They advised me to totally ignore his arguments and to restate my original position and to make a strong play on my education. This I refuse to do. They refused to give me any
help at all in refuting Fred’s lesson which he gave last night. I believe that all sincere arguments deserve to be answered honestly and as fully as possible.”

“It gives me and my wife great sadness to leave the fellowship I have been in all these years and to leave to friends we love so much, but, God's approval is more important to us than their approval. I no longer am attempting to defend anyone’s church doctrine. I am on a search for the truth revealed to all of us in God’s Bible. God willing, to quote one of our judicial phrases, I want the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth. The Lord willing, I will continue the debate with Fred here tomorrow night.

With that, with tears in their eyes, Charles and Fred hugged each other right there on the stage. The moderator then announced that the format of the third night would change. Each minister would answer questions which had been submitted by the audience. The audience member who wrote the question would be given a mike and would read his question and then request that his question be answered by one or both of the ministers.

The news media reported that these two professional ministers started out divided over issues and ended up persuading each other so that they were unified and together at the end. This was what Ted had prayed for. That was what Jesus had prayed for.
FOURTH NIGHT OF THE DEBATE, DISCUSSION

ISSUES:

LORD’S SUPPER, CONFESSIONING SINS, MODE OF BAPTISM

The new moderator, an African American gentleman in his early forties, came to the podium and called for order. He said a prayer which emphasized the importance of seeking truth. He then explained the format, which was different from the first two nights. The two ministers would be seated facing each other and the audience and no time would be called. After the first hour, should the discussion go that long, there would be a 15 minute bathroom break.

As explained earlier, the author of the question would be given a mike and would read his/her question, then request one or both ministers to respond. The author of the question would read his question as written without further comment in order to give time to others.

FIRST TOPIC: THE LORD’S SUPPER

FIRST QUESTION FROM THE AUDIENCE: “In our congregation we have never observed the Lord's Supper because we don't consider ourselves worthy. It says in the King James Version:
I Corinthians 11:27  Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

In addition I read in 1 John 1:8

I John 1:8  If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us.

I know that Fred Clark agrees with me, so I'll direct my question to Charles. How could any of us take the Lord's Supper when we are sinful and all of us are? Would we not be eating and drinking damnation to our souls?”

Charles answered, "I hope that I can help with this issue. The word ‘unworthily’ used by the King James translators is an adverb. It modifies the act of eating and drinking and not the person. One would be guilty of the body and blood if he ate and drank without remembering the Lord. Instead, as he is partaking, say his mind is lusting on a girl across the room while eating and drinking, then he would be guilty. The NIV makes it easier to understand:

I Corinthians 11: 27 Therefore, whoever eats the bread or drinks the cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner will be guilty of sinning against the body and blood of the Lord.

None of us would be worthy to partake of the Supper, but all of us can partake in a worthy manner.

One major religion allows their members to take the bread, but often keeps the cup from their lay members because they reason the cup is literally the blood of Jesus and the members might spill it. So only the priests take the cup. But Jesus said:
Matthew 26:27  *Then he took the cup, gave thanks and offered it to them, saying, 'Drink from it, all of you.*

Notice the words of our Lord, *Drink from it, all of you.* He didn't say, ‘those of you who have sinned abstain,’ but ‘drink from it all of you.’”

Fred responded, “Charles, thank you. We have never served communion in my church. I know this won’t be popular in my church, but I have had serious misgivings about not serving the Lord’s Supper for years and, tonight, after hearing your explanation, I plan to ask my elders for permission to serve it next Sunday.”

When Fred said this, his elders, as a group, except one, got up and walked out, mumbling as they went. It was clear that they were very displeased with their minister. It was also clear that Fred would be seeking employment. They didn’t like it when he dropped his titles, but he did convince Charles on the new birth and once saved always saved issue. As long as their minister was winning, they were okay. Now that he conceded a point, they were uncompromising.

SECOND QUESTION FROM THE AUDIENCE:

A young man of college age asked the next question, “I noticed that Fred’s church doesn’t practice the confession of sins to each other while Charles’ church does. Could you brothers explain to us which way is right?”
Fred responded’ “My heart is open to being taught. My reason for not confessing sins to other people is that I confess them to God. In addition, if I confess them to other people, they could slander me; they would lose trust in me as a minister; they would see me as a hypocrite; it would ruin my reputation, and, how could I preach against sinning when I am sinning?

Charles said, “Confession of one’s sins is a theme throughout the Bible. Look in the Old Testament:

Proverbs 28:13 *He who conceals his sins does not prosper, but whoever confesses and renounces them finds mercy.*

Then look at the preaching of John the Baptist who lived prior to the establishment of the New Covenant:

Mark 1:5 *The whole Judean countryside and all the people of Jerusalem went out to him. Confessing their sins, they were baptized by him in the Jordan River.*

Then look at the teachings of Jesus:

John 3:20 *Everyone who does evil hates the light, and will not come into the light for fear that his deeds will be exposed*

What kept these evil doers from coming to Jesus? Fear that their evil deeds would be exposed. How could they have been exposed unless they confessed them as John the Baptist was insisting that they do?

What was the teaching and practice of the first century Christians once the New Covenant was established?
Acts 19:13-20 Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, “In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out.” Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. One day the evil spirit answered them, “Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?” Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding.

When this became known to the Jews and Greeks living in Ephesus, they were all seized with fear, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honor. Many of those who believed now came and openly confessed their evil deeds. A number who had practiced sorcery brought their scrolls together and burned them publicly. When they calculated the value of the scrolls, the total came to fifty thousand drachmas. In this way the word of the Lord spread widely and grew in power.

What did they do after they believed? They openly confessed their evil deeds. Then did they secretly burn their scrolls privately at midnight behind their houses? No, they burned them publicly. How much were
they worth? Fifty thousand drachmas! Perhaps confessing sins publicly was not just for the Jews during the days of John the Baptist.

1 Corinthians 14:24-25 *But if an unbeliever or someone who does not understand comes in while everybody is prophesying, he will be convinced by all that he is a sinner and will be judged by all, and the secrets of his heart will be laid bare. So he will fall down and worship God, exclaiming, “God is really among you!”*

Again, how are the secrets of his heart going to be laid bare unless he confesses? Why would he confess? He was convinced by all that he is a sinner because they were prophesying in his language and not in some unknown language.

1 John 1:7-10 *But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin.*

*If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. If we claim we have not sinned, we make him out to be a liar and his word has no place in our lives.*

Suppose two brothers commit the same sin, for example, say they both went to a swimming pool just to lust on women. One of them is
guilt ridden, repents and confesses his sin to another brother and asks God to forgive him. He is walking in the light. Light drives out darkness which is the hiding of sin. The other brother hides his sin in the darkness of his soul. The two continue, one is an unforgiven hypocrite and the other continues walking in the light where nothing is hidden. He is the opposite of the hypocrite. Repentance plus confessing all one’s sins to God and to others eradicates all hypocrisy!

Notice the phrase “If we confess our sins…” he will forgive us and purify us. What is the implication if we hide our sin? He will not forgive us nor will he purify us.

One more example and I will turn it back over to my good friend Fred.

James 5:16 Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

To whom would one have to confess sins to obey this command?

“Confess your sins to each other.” I get with another brother and confess my sins to him and he confesses his sins to me. This is a command of God. Confessing your sins privately to God does not render obedience to this command.

One final observation about sin and confession: God commands us to repent, but just saying this to a sinner very often is not enough. One
needs to study out sin with them. I have had people ready to join our fellowship thinking they were Christians while they were still living with someone to whom they were not married. I have had married people coming into our fellowship who committed adultery every week. I have found that by going through a sin list such as the one in Galatians 5: 19-21, and being open about my ugly past, the sinner becomes more trusting and eventually confesses every sin which he can remember. Then one can expect true repentance. The sinner knows what he or she has to give up. I have fully presented my case and I gladly await Fred's response.”

Fred answered, “Ladies and Gentlemen, again I am without words to express my appreciation to Charles for the clarity with which he has explained this issue. I confess publicly right here and now that I have not taught nor practiced the truth regarding the confessing of my sins and I have not taught my congregation the truth on this issue. I pray that they will forgive me.” When Fred said this, thirteen more members of his church got up and stomped out in protest of what their minister had just conceded.

A number of others asked various questions until the first hour had expired. The moderator then came up and announced a fifteen minute break after which they would take more questions.

During the break there was considerable buzz among the audience about what they just heard. Those from Charles’ church were especially pleased
that their minister had won two rounds with his opponent and that the opponent had publicly conceded both issues.

The break ended and the ministers were ready again to answer questions.

THIRD QUESTION FROM AUDIENCE: An old man asked, “Sirs, what is the proper mode of baptism and who are the proper candidates for baptism? Are all modes acceptable to God or does God approve of just one--either sprinkling, pouring or immersion? And should we baptize infants and adults or just adults?”

Charles: Our church practices sprinkling. Although I will immerse a candidate for baptism if he insists, I prefer sprinkling. As always, let us start with the Scriptures:

Isaiah 52:14-15 *Just as there were many who were appalled at him— his appearance was so disfigured beyond that of any man and his form marred beyond human likeness— so will he sprinkle many nations, and kings will shut their mouths because of him. For what they were not told, they will see, and what they have not heard, they will understand.*
Obviously, this Scripture is speaking of the Messiah, Jesus. The first part describes how he was beaten and mistreated when he was crucified and the second part speaks of the salvation he brings through sprinkling.

Again, from one of the prophets:

**Ezekiel 36:25-26** *I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you will be clean; I will cleanse you from all your impurities and from all your idols. I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit in you; I will remove from you your heart of stone and give you a heart of flesh.*

In addition, the blood of animals in the Old Testament foreshadowed the sacrifice of Jesus. The blood was always sprinkled on the people. They were never immersed in it.

Finally, let me close with a New Testament verse:

**1 Peter 1:2** who have been chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the sanctifying work of the Spirit, for obedience to Jesus Christ and sprinkling by his blood:

Grace and peace be yours in abundance.

I am now ready to hear Fred on this issue.
Fred said, “Thank you, Charles. Let me humbly put forth my reasons for rejecting sprinkling or pouring in favor of immersion. Charles, you have already taught me and this audience valuable information with regard to Greek words. For example, you taught us the Greek words for faith and believe. My Greek dictionary says the original word from which we get baptize is *baptizo*, and that the original definition is to immerse.”

“That is correct, Fred, although I think it may be taken somewhat figuratively.”

“Thank you, Charles. So when Jesus said in Matthew 28: 18-20, Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, he was literally saying go and immerse them.

“Why was John the Baptist baptizing in Aenon?

John 3:23 *Now John also was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because there was plenty of water, and people were constantly coming to be baptized.*

He baptized there because there was plenty of water there. Plenty of water is required for immersion, not sprinkling. Consider another Scripture on John’s baptism:
Mark 1:5 *The whole Judean countryside and all the people of Jerusalem went out to him. Confessing their sins, they were baptized by him in the Jordan River.*

As you can clearly see in this verse, John was baptizing *in* the Jordan River, not *with* the Jordan River.

To review something I said earlier, Jesus came to this earth to redeem us. Suppose that, after he preached the greatest sermon in Matthew 5,6, & 7, he then returned to heaven. Where would we all go? We’d be lost! Suppose that after healing the man born blind in John 9 and raising Lazarus from the dead he had returned to heaven. Where would that leave us? That would leave us without salvation. What did Jesus have to do in order to meet the demands of God’s justice and provide us an escape from the penalty of our sins. Jesus had to take all our punishment when he suffered and died on the cross, was buried and rose again the third day. Now we will read two Scriptures on the baptism that connects us to that sacrifice:

**Romans 6:3-4** *Or don’t you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.*
Colossians 2:12 having been buried with him in baptism and raised with him through your faith in the power of God, who raised him from the dead.

Even if we didn’t know that the Greek word for baptism (baptizo) means to immerse and is never used to mean sprinkle, we could learn from these Scriptures that scriptural baptism is a burial. God provided salvation for us when his Son died on the cross, was buried and rose again the third day. We complete the new birth when we, by faith and repentance die to our sins as Jesus died on the cross, we are buried in water as Jesus was buried in the tomb and then we are lifted up out of the water as Jesus rose from the dead. Every time we witness a scriptural baptism, we see again the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus through our friend who is being baptized! When a person is sprinkled instead of being immersed, there is none of this wonderful and beautiful connection to the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus.

I realize that I have not talked about the Old Testament scriptures Charles used. As someone has said, we use the New Testament to interpret the Old and it seems to me that this is a good example of just that.

One more thing, for those having difficulty with the thought that the new birth is completed at the point of baptism, I offer this chart:
Some baptize saved people while others baptize the lost, which is right? Look at the Bible stated purposes of baptism and then look at the condition of the sinner and the condition of the born again or saved person and then you decide which one needs baptism.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>THE LOST PERSON</th>
<th>BIBLE STATED PURPOSES OF BAPTISM</th>
<th>THE SAVED PERSON</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Is in sin, Rom.3:23</td>
<td>To wash away sin Acts 22:16</td>
<td>Freed from sin Rev.1:5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Fred projected the above chart and then said, “Look at the condition of the lost. He or she is still in sin. Then look at the condition of the born again person. According to Revelation 1:5, they have been freed from their sin. Now, look in the center of the chart at the Bible stated purpose of baptism. Acts 22:16 And now what are you waiting for? Get up, be baptized and wash your sins away, calling on his name.’ Now you decide, which makes more sense to you? Would you baptize a person who is still in his sins in order to wash away his sins or would you baptize a person who has already been freed from his sins to free him from his sins? To me, it seems like nonsense to baptize a person who has no sins to wash away his sins.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>THE LOST PERSON</th>
<th>BIBLE STATED PURPOSE OF BAPTISM</th>
<th>CONDITION OF THE SAVED</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>LOST!</td>
<td>To save 1 Peter 3:21</td>
<td>Already saved</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now look at my second chart. The lost person is lost. I believe that all of us here tonight can agree on that. If not, you are free to speak up now.

(Fred paused, no reaction from the audience) The condition of the saved
person is that he is saved. Again I expect no disagreement on that. Now what is the Bible stated purpose of baptism in

I Peter 3:21? *and this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you*  
also—*not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a good conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ,*

The Bible clearly states twice in this verse that baptism saves. Again I ask, would you baptize a lost person to save her or would you baptize a saved person to save her? It makes more sense to me to baptize a lost person to save her. To put forth a simple parallel, would you go to the license office to license your car for this year that has just been licensed? If you tried, the license people would possibly call the officials to have you committed.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>THE LOST PERSON</th>
<th>BIBLE STATED PURPOSE OF BAPTISM</th>
<th>THE SAVED PERSON</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>W/O GOD, CHRIST</td>
<td>TO GET INTO CHRIST</td>
<td>ALREADY IN CHRIST</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OR HOPE EPH.2:12</td>
<td>Romans 6:3-4</td>
<td>Romans 16:7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Now look at the third chart. The lost person is really lost,

Ephesians 2:12 *remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners to the covenants of the promise, without hope and without God in the world.*
According to Romans 16:7, the saved are already in Christ. The Bible states clearly in Romans 6:3-4 that lost are baptized into Christ. Again, which makes more sense to you, to baptize a person who is without Christ into Christ or to baptize a person who is already into Christ to get them into Christ?

In Galatians 3:27, baptism is where we get into Christ and become clothed with Christ:

\[
\text{for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.}
\]

“Now, how foolish to think that you baptize a person who is already saved to save him or to baptize a person whose sins have already been washed away to wash away his sins or to baptize a person who is already in Christ to put him into Christ. No, you baptize the unsaved to save him/her. You baptize the person who is still in his sins to wash away his sins, and you baptize the person who is without Christ to put him into Christ. The Bible nowhere says that baptism is just an outward sign of an inward grace. These words do not come from God, they were made up by men."

Charles was troubled by what he heard from Fred’s presentation. He thought, could all those professors in his seminary have been wrong?
After all, they seemed to be sincere men with a thorough knowledge of Greek and Hebrew.

Charles took the mic and said, "Ladies and Gentlemen, what my friend Fred has presented to us here tonight goes against all my theological training and against what I and my church have taught; however, what Fred has taught seems to make more sense. I have no ready answers to Fred tonight. I admit that I have more study to do on this topic."

Appendix C

FRED CLARK WROTE THE FOLLOWING ARTICLE TO HELP THOSE WHO DIDN’T UNDERSTAND THE BIBLE TEACHING REGARDING THE SO-CALLED “ORIGINAL SIN.”

PUNISHING THE INNOCENT

Edward Honaker was convicted of raping and sodomizing a Virginia woman in 1985. He was given three life sentences and remained in prison for ten years. Then Barry Scheck, a lawyer, ordered DNA tests on the semen stains in the victims clothing. After the tests proved Honaker’s innocence, Governor Allen phoned him and informed him that he was receiving an unconditional pardon!

Our legal system has all kinds of institutions in place to avoid this very thing—the conviction of the innocent. We say that we would prefer allowing ten guilty people to go free rather than convicting one innocent person but, despite the Bill of Rights, defense lawyers, judges, and all that, the innocent do sometimes get convicted as Edward Honaker did. We cannot give him back ten
years of his life. No amount of money can compensate for the misery this innocent man endured for all those years! This was horrible. Imagine it happening to you!

The U.S. Constitution says Congress can declare the punishment for treason, “...but no attainder of treason shall work corruption of blood...” This means that our system can punish people who are convicted of treason, but, we cannot punish their children or other innocent relatives of the traitor. Why not? It is a principal our founders may have discovered from God in:

Ezekiel 18:20 “The soul who sins is the one who will die. The son will not share the guilt of the father, nor will the father share the guilt of the son. The righteousness of the righteous man will be credited to him, and the wickedness of the wicked man will be charged against him.”

This is a principal thoroughly established in the United States. We have numerous movies and books based on some variation of this theme. The Oxbow Incident, a book and a movie, tells the story of two innocent men with cattle they bought from a rancher. Word went out that this rancher was murdered and a posse was organized to go and look for the murderers. The posse found the two men with cattle carrying the brand of the supposed murdered rancher. They falsely assumed that these men had murdered the rancher and then stole his cattle. The posse executed the men without a trial. Later it was learned that the men they executed were innocent and the remainder of the story explores the effect on the members of the posse of having murdered innocent men.
DEFINED AND EXPLAINED

Adam’s sin was eating the forbidden fruit in the Garden of Eden. Some religions teach that the guilt of Adam’s sin was passed on to his descendants and that little babies who die without being sprinkled will go to hell, not because of anything they have done, but because their great, great grandfather Adam sinned and God passed the guilt of that sin on to them. Other religions teach the opposite. They say that, not only will all babies go to heaven regardless of the sprinkling, but that it is a sin to sprinkle babies. These doctrines are not true or false because we like them or don’t like them. The real question is, what does the Bible teach about this subject? Whatever it teaches, we must be ready to accept it whether we like it or not.

Here is the way proponents of the doctrine of original sin put it: Martin Luther said that even children dying unbaptized are lost, (Seeburg, History of Doctrine Vol.II, p229) Augustine of the Roman Catholic Church said concerning the guilt of the original sin that no one is exempt, not even newborn children. (p.343) He went on to say that children are infected by the parents’ sins as well as Adam’s and that the actual sins of the parents impose guilt on the children. He said that unconscious infants dying without baptism (pouring) are damned by virtue of their inherited guilt. Calvin, founder of the Presbyterian Church, stated that original sin makes us subject to the wrath of God.
If proof of a doctrine could be had by the support of powerful and influential church leaders, then the doctrine of original sin would already be established by Luther, Augustine and Calvin and others like them. If Luther, Calvin and the Roman Catholic Church are correct, then these little ones who do not even know how to reason, will suffer eternally in hell for something they had no power to control! (The Catholics have modified their doctrine to some degree.) Does this seem unjust to you? Is God unjust?

A more important question is what does God think? What does the Bible say about this subject? The Bible gives us the mind of God on the subject.

SCRIPTURES USED BY PROONENTS OF ORIGINAL SIN IN DEFENSE OF THAT DOCTRINE

Two Scriptures cited most often in support of the doctrine of original sin are Romans 5:12-19 and Psalms 51:1.

Psalm 51:5, Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me.

Does this Scripture teach that the guilt of Adam’s sin was passed on to all his descendants? If so, this is a situation far more dramatic than the Ox Bow incident or the Ed Honaker case where innocent adults were convicted of crimes they did not commit! We are talking about millions of tiny babies who died before they could talk or know anything about right or wrong going to hell forever and suffering the pain of torment forever
and ever for what someone else did! As obnoxious as this seems, if that is what the Scriptures in question teach, then we must be ready to accept it.

Let’s look first at Psalms 51:5. David said, “Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me.” What’s the context? David had just come under conviction for his sins of adultery, deceit and murder. He said nothing about Adam’s sin. He was expressing deep feelings about his own sinfulness, hence, he was saying I am so bad that surely I was sinful at birth! Other Scriptures which use this phrase might be enlightening. Another Psalm by the same author, David:

Psalms 58:3 “Even from birth the wicked go astray; from the womb they are wayward and speak lies.”

Does this mean that wicked people actually talk and speak lies as soon as they come out of the womb? Surely not! Another Scripture using this phrase is

Job 31:18, “…and from my birth I guided the widow.”

Both these books are poetic. Job is not saying that as a one-day-old infant he walked down a path guiding a widow or that as an infant he gave her good advice. He was saying that this was his heart from his early memories on.

It appears that the advocates of original sin will have to look elsewhere rather than Psalms 51:5 to support their doctrine. Adam or Adam’s sin is
not mentioned here. Even if one supposed that an infant could actually commit a willful act of sin, David is speaking of his own sin here and not that of his great grandfather, Adam.

Now, let us consider what God is saying in Romans:

**Romans 5:12-19** Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, because all sinned—for before the law was given, sin was in the world. But sin is not taken into account where there is no law. Nevertheless, death reigned from the time of Adam to the time of Moses, even over those who did not sin by breaking a command, as did Adam, who was a pattern of the one to come.

But the gift is not like the trespass. For the many died because of the trespass of one man, how much more did God’s grace and the gift that came by the grace of the one man, Jesus Christ, overflow to the many! Again, the gift of God is not like the result of the one man’s sin: The judgment followed one sin and brought condemnation, but the gift followed many trespasses and brought justification. For if, by the trespass of the one, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive God’s abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ.

Consequently, just as the result of one trespass was condemnation for all men, so also the result of one act of righteousness was justification that brings life for all men. For just as through the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners, so also through the obedience of the one man the many will be made righteous.

This Scripture is was written to people who were having trouble believing that one single act of one man at one time (Jesus dying on the cross) could bring about so much good and could cover so many sins. To
help the disciples in Rome to understand this, Paul reminded the Romans of one act at one time by the one man Adam and how much bad it brought to all mankind for all time. If one act, one time, from one man, Adam, did so much evil, why was it hard for them to accept that the one act of Jesus, the Son of God, was even more powerful in the opposite way? (This writer is indebted to Lindsey Garmon for insight into this passage)

It is obvious in these verses that Adam did something that affects us spiritually and not just physically. Verse 19 and other verses make this abundantly plain,

“... through the disobedience of the one man (Adam) many were made sinners.”

That being settled let us take up the task of finding out how what Adam did affects us spiritually. Have you ever thought seriously about the names of the two trees in the Garden of Eden? Genesis 2:9 tells us their names—the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Adam and Eve were instructed that they should NOT eat of the second tree, the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. So, before they ate of it what would they not know that they would know after eating from it? The answer is good and evil! Before they ate they did not possess the knowledge of good and evil at least in the way we do today. After they ate they and all their descendants were cursed with this knowledge.
It is like God built a wall around the Garden of Eden to keep law out and to keep Adam and Eve from knowing good and evil, because, if they did, the temptation would be too great and they would sin repeatedly. They had one simple command—leave that tree of the knowledge of good and evil alone! They were innocent.

Genesis 2:25, *The man and his wife were both naked and they felt no shame.*

Here is the story as recorded in Genesis:

Genesis 3: 1-10 Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden’?” The woman said to the serpent, “We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.’” “You will not surely die,” the serpent said to the woman. “For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.” When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it. Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves. Then the man and his wife heard the sound of the LORD God as he was walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and they hid from the LORD God among the trees of the garden. But the LORD God called to the man, “Where are you?” He answered, “I heard you in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid.”
Satan states the obvious in verse 4, “...when you eat of it, your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God knowing good and evil.” He also lied to her and said that she would not die. She was deceived and ate of it and gave some to her husband and he ate. Verse 7, then the eyes of both of them were opened and they realized that they were naked.

Adam and Eve were now the possessors of the knowledge of good and evil and that, rather than guilt, was what our grandparents passed on to us. Since then none of us have been able to keep all the flood of law which came pouring in with the knowledge of good and evil. We all choose the evil rather than the good! Romans 5:12 explains this perfectly:

\[
\text{Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned—}
\]

Notice the phrase, “because all sinned.” How did sin enter the world through one man? He and his wife brought the knowledge of good and evil on the human race and, having this terrible knowledge, we all sin! (Side note: this knowledge of good and evil came on the whole human race, even those who live in far off nations like Outer Mongolia who may never have heard of Jesus. (Romans 2:14-15) They too know good and evil and they choose evil. That’s why it is necessary for us to get the gospel to all the people of the world!) There is nothing about guilt being passed on
here. This is in complete harmony with the whole 18th chapter of Ezekiel.

Look at verse 20:

*The soul who sins is the one who will die. The son will not share the guilt of the father, nor will the father share the guilt of the son. The righteousness of the righteous man will be credited to him, and the wickedness of the wicked will be charged against him.*

Since the son cannot, as this verse says, share the *guilt* of the father, then Adam could not have passed the *guilt* on even to his son Seth from whom we’ve all descended. Since the *guilt* stopped with Adam and Eve and was not passed on even to their son Seth, it could not be passed on to all the little babies who are their descendants!

Therefore, it is unnecessary to baptize little babies who do not yet know good and evil. Not knowing it yet, they have not chosen evil. The Scriptures recognize that little children do not know good from bad:

Deuteronomy 1:39, “And the little ones…, your children WHO DO NOT YET KNOW GOOD FROM BAD—they will enter the land.”

How did Jesus feel toward little children?

Matthew 19:13-15 Then little children were brought to Jesus for him to place his hands on them and pray for them. But the disciples rebuked those who brought them.

Jesus said, “Let the little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for the kingdom of heaven belongs to such as these.” When he had placed his hands on them, he went on from there.
Jesus loved these children! I have heard ministers on the radio trying to justify their doctrine of original sin by trying to prove how wicked and mean little children are! My wife and I are the parents of three lovely children and it is my experience that the younger they were, the more innocent and good they were and not the opposite as these ministers try to prove.

The Scriptures clearly teach that **guilt** cannot be passed on to our children (Ezekiel 18). They are too young to know good or evil, therefore, since they have no inherited sin and since they have not sinned themselves, they are not lost and there is no reason to baptize them! That explains why there is no Bible command to baptize infants anywhere in the Bible and that there is no Bible example of little babies being baptized! To the contrary, Jesus taught us to make people into disciples prior to baptism

Matthew 28:19 *Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,*

Who is the “them?” Disciples! Make disciples and then baptize THEM, the disciples you have made. It is absurd to think that one can train or make a one day old baby into a disciple, therefore, infants are not candidates for baptism! This is in harmony with:
Acts 8:12: But when they believed Philip as he preached the good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

In the whole country of Samaria were there no babies? It says they baptized “MEN AND WOMEN,” There would be no reason to mention babies if they were not being baptized. There was no reason to baptize any of the Samaritan infants because none of them had sinned and, not having sinned, they were not lost.

Once we understand a truth in God’s word, it fits nicely with all other parts of the Bible. Look at:

Colossians 2:12 having been buried with him in baptism and raised with him through your faith in the power of God, who raised him from the dead.

Whose faith? The faith of the people being baptized. Infants can’t have faith! (Side note here: Baptism in the Bible has never meant sprinkling. The word itself in Greek means to immerse. Even without that knowledge, one can see here that when a person is baptized, they reenact the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus. As Jesus was buried in the tomb, we bury the person being baptized in water (we immerse them). It is a likeness. We see the person laid out there under the water and it reminds us of Jesus being laid out in the tomb. Then he/she is lifted up out of
the water in the likeness of the resurrection of Jesus.) Sprinkling of infants is Satan’s ultimate deception. Instead of immersing adults as God’s word directs, sprinkle infants and call it baptism. Then convince people that they were saved as infants when they were sprinkled. Then, as they do mature into adults and do sin, that sin separates them from God and they are lost (Isaiah 59:1-2). At that point they do need to repent, confess and be baptized, but, if Satan is successful in his deception, they will consider the infant baptism that they do not remember, but were told by their parents that they received to be sufficient and will go to their grave in a lost condition thinking falsely that they are saved!

WHY DOES IT MATTER IF PEOPLE BELIEVE IN THE DOCTRINE OF ORIGINAL SIN?

1. It leads people to believe that God is a terrible wicked God who punishes millions of innocent babies in hell forever who never did anything good or bad! That these babies would have escaped hell if some preacher or priest could have just gotten to them with some water and sprinkled it on their little heads just before they died! (Of course, those born to Buddhists or Muslims or other non-Christians would not have a ghost of a chance of getting sprinkled.) This is so evil that it makes the posse who killed
innocent men without a trial seem righteous by comparison to such a cruel God! One could look at stories of injustice such as Ed Honaker as being okay because that’s what God does. This is not the nature of our gracious, loving God. The Bible says God is love!

2. The doctrine did not originate with God and did not come from the Bible. It contradicts the Bible in Ezekiel 18:20 and other places.

3. It is one of Satan’s most successful tricks in convincing people they are born again and saved when they are not! First, baptism is not sprinkling or pouring, the original Greek word means to immerse or be buried (Romans 6:3-4). Second, infants have not sinned, have no faith, cannot be made into disciples and, therefore, are not candidates for baptism! When these sprinkled infants grow into adulthood, they do sin and are, therefore, separated from God (Isaiah 59:1-2) and are lost and on their way to hell, not because of Adam’s sin, but, because of their own sin. (Romans 1:18-3:20 goes into great detail about the sins which cause men to be lost and Adam’s sin is not even mentioned there.) At that point they do need to be born again, but, sadly, they are not because Satan has convinced them that they were saved at their infant sprinkling.
4. The words “original sin” is not in the Bible anywhere. The idea of original sin in nowhere in the Bible regardless of wording. It was invented by men a few hundred years after the Bible was written.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Leroy Walters lives in St. Louis, Missouri with his wife Edna. Leroy is a commercial pilot and holds the Airline Transport Pilot rating in single and multiengine land airplanes. In addition, he is a flight instructor in instrument, single and multiengine airplanes. He, also, taught a private pilot course at Parkway Senior High School. He instructed the students at the airport after school for their private pilot ratings.

He and his wife had three children and later adopted a five year old daughter. They lost their oldest child, Lloyd, age 17, in a drowning accident. Lloyd had already obtained his Private Pilot license.